

University of Science and Technology of China  
A dissertation for doctor's degree



**Measurement of the  
Forward-Backward Charge  
Asymmetry( $A_{FB}$ ) using  
 $p\bar{p} \rightarrow Z/\gamma^* \rightarrow e^+e^-$  events in  
 $\sqrt{S} = 1.96$  **TeV****

Author's Name : Hang Yin

Speciality : High Energy Physics

Supervisors : Prof. Liang Han

Finished Time : June 2010

---

© Copyright by  
Hang Yin  
2010

---

## ABSTRACT

Title of dissertation: Measurement of the Forward-Backward Charge Asymmetry( $A_{FB}$ ) using  $p\bar{p} \rightarrow Z/\gamma^* \rightarrow e^+e^-$  events in  $\sqrt{S} = 1.96$  TeV

Hang Yin, Doctor of Philosophy, 2010

Dissertation directed by: Professor Liang Han  
Department of Modern Physics

This dissertation describes a measurement of the forward-backward asymmetry( $A_{FB}$ ) in  $p\bar{p} \rightarrow Z/\gamma^* \rightarrow ee$  events using  $5.0 \text{ fb}^{-1}$  data collected by the DØ detector at the Fermilab Tevatron. The  $A_{FB}$  is measured as a function of the invariant mass of the electron-positron pair. Along with obtaining normalized differential cross section  $\frac{1}{\sigma} \times \frac{d\sigma}{dM}$  and  $Z$  to light quark couplings, we measured the Standard Model(SM) fundamental parameter, the effective weak mixing angle  $\sin^2 \theta_{eff}^{lept}$ , with an unprecedented precise in light quark sector, namely the single DØ measurement has surpassed the LEP combination of four experiment results of inclusive hadronic charge asymmetry.

## Publications as Primary Author

- “Measurement of the forward-backward charge asymmetry and extraction of  $\sin^2 \theta_W^{eff}$  in  $p\bar{p} \rightarrow Z/\gamma^* \rightarrow e^+e^- + X$  events produced at  $\sqrt{s} = 1.96$  TeV”, V. M. Abazov *et al.*  
Phys. Rev. Lett. **101**, 191801 (2008).

- 
- “Search for scalar neutrino particles in  $e+\mu$  final states in  $p\bar{p}$  collisions at  $\sqrt{s} = 1.96$  TeV”, V. M. Abazov *et al.*  
Phys. Rev. Lett. **100**, 241803 (2008).
  - “Search for  $\tau$  sneutrino particles in the electron plus muon final state at DØ”, conference note 5894.
  - “Search for high-mass narrow resonances in the di-electron channel at DØ”, conference note 5923.

## DØ Notes as Primary Author

- **Note 5603:** Measurement of the forward-backward charge asymmetry in  $p\bar{p} \rightarrow Z/\gamma * + X \rightarrow ee + X$  events produced at  $\sqrt{s} = 1.96$  TeV (RunIIa)
- **Note 5867:** Measurement of the forward-backward charge asymmetry in  $p\bar{p} \rightarrow Z/\gamma * + X \rightarrow ee + X$  events produced at  $\sqrt{s} = 1.96$  TeV (RunIIb)
- **Note 5299:** Search for sneutrino resonance in the  $e + \mu$  final states in RPV SUSY at DØ (RunIIa)
- **Note 5648:** Search for sneutrino resonance in the  $e + \mu$  final states in RPV SUSY at DØ (RunIIb)
- **Note 5894:** Search for sneutrino resonance in the  $e + \mu$  final states in RPV SUSY at DØ (RunIIb conference note)
- **Note 5564:** A Study of electron charge misidentification in Run IIa data
- **Note 5635:** Study of electron track matching parameters with RunIIb data

- 
- **Note 5761:** Electron and photon identification with p20 data

## Presentations

- “ Measurement of  $A_{FB}$  and Extraction of  $\sin^2 \theta_W^{eff}$  in  $p\bar{p} \rightarrow Z/\gamma^* \rightarrow e^+e^- + X$  ”, APS April Meeting, St. Louis, MO, April 14th, 2008.
- “ Measurement of the Forward-Backward Charge Asymmetry( $A_{FB}$ ) in  $p\bar{p} \rightarrow Z/\gamma^* \rightarrow e^+e^-$  events at  $\sqrt{S}=1.96$  TeV ”, Lake Louise Winter Institute 2010 Conference, Alberta, Canada, Feb. 16th, 2010.
- Major DØ internal talks:
  - “Stability check of Calorimeter calibration”, Calorimeter Algorithm meeting, Fermilab, Nov. 27, 2007
  - “p20 electron track match study”, Calorimeter Algorithm meeting, Fermilab, Feb. 20, 2008
  - “Update on Diem trigger OR - V15 study”, Trigger study Group meeting, Fermilab, Feb. 21, 2008
  - “Measurement of  $A_{FB}$  and Extraction of  $\sin^2 \theta_W^{eff}$  in  $p\bar{p} \rightarrow Z/\gamma^* \rightarrow e^+e^- + X$  ”, All DØ meeting, Fermilab, April 4, 2008:
  - “Stability check of Calorimeter calibration”, Calorimeter Algorithm meeting, Fermilab, Oct. 8, 2008
  - “Stability check of Calorimeter calibration”, Calorimeter Algorithm meeting, Fermilab, Jan. 7, 2009

- 
- “Energy scale lumi dependence”, Electron identification meeting, Fermilab, Oct. 1, 2009
  - “ $\phi$  inter-calibration of Calorimeter”, Calorimeter calibration meeting, Fermilab, Dec. 10, 2009
  - “Measurement of Forward-Backward Asymmetry( $A_{FB}$ ) in  $p\bar{p} \rightarrow Z/\gamma^* \rightarrow e^+e^- + X$ ”, Electroweak meeting meeting, Fermilab, Dec. 10, 2009

**The main innovations in this thesis are listed blow:**

- **DI-ELECTRON TRIGGER EFFICIENCY:**

Determined the di-electron trigger efficiency for the first time at DØ. With increasing instantaneous luminosity, the OR of single electron triggers is not fully efficient for electrons with transverse momentum ( $p_T$ ) less than 30 GeV. This threshold (30 GeV) is too tight for many analyses. Di-electron trigger can be used to improve the trigger efficiency in low  $p_T$  region, almost all analyses with di-electron or diphoton final state (precision measurements of  $Z$  boson properties using  $Z \rightarrow ee$  events, search for new di-electron resonance and search for SM Higgs boson in  $H \rightarrow \gamma\gamma$  channel) benefit from this study.

- **ELECTRON TRACK MATCH:**

Studied the electron track-matching requirement for Run IIb data, the new requirement has greatly reduced the probability for a jet to fake an electron.

- **ELECTRON ENERGY CORRECTION:**

Studied the electron energy scale versus instantaneous luminosity and derived

---

correction factors. This correction helped to improve the electron energy resolution for the whole Run IIb data.

- INTER-CALIBRATION OF CALORIMETERS:

Performed  $\phi$  inter-calibration for both the electromagnetic and hadronic calorimeters after the 2009 shutdown. The  $\phi$  inter-calibration is mainly to uniformize the response of each  $\eta$  ring and reduce the constant term for the calorimeter energy resolution. This is very important for almost all analyses done at DØ. Performed the stability check of calibration constants every six months since July 2007 and monitored the calorimeter performance over time.

- ELECTRON ENERGY SCALE/RESOLUTION:

Studied the energy scale/resolution of electron, which make the Monte Carlo has a reasonable agreement with real data in the  $Z$ -pole region. The agreement in  $Z$ -pole mass region make the precise measurements of  $W$  and  $Z$  bosons' properties is possible.

- UNFOLDING:

Distributions measured in high-energy physics(HEP) experiments are often distorted or transformed by limited acceptance and finite resolution of the detectors. The unfolding of measured distributions is an important, in this analysis, we used the response matrices method to do the unfolding.

- HIGH ORDER CORRECTIONS:

The Geant Monte Carlo(MC) used in DØ is PYTHIA, which is a leading or-

---

der(LO) generator. In this analysis, in order to compare the measurements directly with LEP and SLD results, we do the next-next-to-leading order(NNLO) k-factor correction at first, and then with the next-to-leading order(NLO) generator ZGRAD2, we measured the NLO EW final state radiation(FSR) corrections, and apply  $2D(M_Z - \cos\theta^*)$  reweighting on the signal, which make precise measurements on Tevatron can compared with LEP, SLD directly.

---

To my family  
parents, wife, son and sister.

## Acknowledgements

During this thesis writing, I know it is the time to thank all of people who kindly provided me help in different ways. This work would not have been possible without them help.

First I would like to thank my advisor Professor Liang Han, for his tireless guidance and useful discussion. When I started working at DØ, he patiently taught me almost all of things need for HEP, from Linux system operations to how to write a *C++* program, from the Feynman-Diagram to the detectors of hadronic collider. I feel very lucky to have worked with him for the past five years and appreciate all the skills and knowledge that I have learned from him, and I believe those will continue to benefit me in my future. I also extend my appreciation specially to Professor Yanwen Liu, who gave me a lot of help on my service works when he stayed in FermiLab 2007.

Secondly, I would like to thank Professor Junjie Zhu(University of Michigan), for taking such good care of me. He taught me so much and been like my advisor at FermiLab. Each time I had anything do not understand, I could always turn to him for help, and he always could make a complicate problem became problem can be easily solved. I really feel very lucky to

have worked with him for past three years.

Thirdly, I would like to thank all the people in DØ Electroweak group, specially thank Professor Heidi Schellman, she gave me so many fresh ideas during the analysis. Also thank Professor Tim Bolton, Martin Grunewald, and Andrew Askew and all members in EB-021(chaired by Cecilia Gerber) for many useful discussion and comments.

I would like to thank all the students in our USTC HEP group: Xuebing Bu, Hongtang Wei, Pengfei Ding, Chenwei Gong and Siqi Yang. I also had a wonderful experience working in the calorimeter calibration group and electron-identification group, it was pleasant to work with those wonderful people. Sorry that I cannot mention all their names here, because it will be really long list. Many thanks to the friends I got to know in Fermilab: Junjie Zhu, Yunhe Xie, Weigang Geng, Zhenyu Ye, Tingjun Yang, Zhiyi Liu, Chun Xun, Feng Guo, Guo Chen, Xiao Cai and Yu Zeng. With all of them, my stay in Fermilab and USTC turns to a lot more enjoyable and delightful.

Finally I would like to thank my family and my wife Guoxia Pang, who sharing the last five years of her life with me. I would have never made it without her love and support.

# Contents

Nomenclature	xxx
<b>1 Introduction</b>	<b>1</b>
1.1 Standard Model . . . . .	1
1.2 Weak mixing angle . . . . .	9
1.2.1 Experimental results of $\sin^2 \theta_W^{eff}$ . . . . .	12
1.3 The Forward-Backward charge asymmetry . . . . .	15
<b>2 Experimental Apparatus</b>	<b>25</b>
2.1 The Accelerator . . . . .	25
2.2 DØ Detector . . . . .	28
2.2.1 The DØ Coordinate System . . . . .	29
2.2.2 Tracking System . . . . .	30
2.2.3 Preshower Detectors . . . . .	33
2.2.4 Calorimeters . . . . .	34
2.2.5 Muon System . . . . .	44
<b>3 Measurement Strategy</b>	<b>47</b>

# CONTENTS

---

<b>4</b>	<b>Event Selection</b>	<b>49</b>
4.1	Data sample . . . . .	49
4.2	Trigger . . . . .	49
4.3	Integrated Luminosity . . . . .	50
4.4	Event selection . . . . .	51
4.5	Selected $Z/\gamma^*$ candidates . . . . .	53
<b>5</b>	<b>Efficiencies</b>	<b>59</b>
5.1	Introduction . . . . .	59
5.2	Electron efficiencies . . . . .	61
5.2.1	Tag-Probe method . . . . .	61
5.2.2	Electron PreSelection efficiency . . . . .	62
5.2.3	Electron ID efficiency . . . . .	63
5.2.4	Electron track match efficiency . . . . .	66
5.2.5	Electron identification corrections . . . . .	71
5.3	MC Reweighting . . . . .	72
5.3.1	Electron energy scale and resolution . . . . .	72
5.3.2	Instantaneous luminosity and vertex reweighting . . . . .	73
5.3.3	$Z$ boson $M$ reweighting . . . . .	73
5.3.4	$Z$ boson $p_T$ and $y$ reweighting . . . . .	74
5.4	$\phi$ -mod and luminosity correction on both data and MC . . . . .	74
5.4.1	luminosity correction . . . . .	74
5.4.2	$\phi$ -mod correction . . . . .	76
5.4.3	Forward/Backward efficiencies . . . . .	76

5.4.4	Ratio of forward and backward efficiencies . . . . .	76
5.4.5	Fitted Ratio values for forward and backward efficiencies . . . . .	82
<b>6</b>	<b>Backgrounds</b>	<b>85</b>
6.1	PYTHIA GEANT MC samples . . . . .	86
6.2	SM backgrounds . . . . .	86
6.3	QCD background . . . . .	87
6.4	Comparison between Data and Signal+QCD+SM backgrounds: . . . . .	98
<b>7</b>	<b>Unfolding and Closure test</b>	<b>107</b>
7.1	Detector resolution unfolding . . . . .	107
7.2	Acceptance and efficiencies corrections . . . . .	111
7.2.1	Kinematic and geometric effects . . . . .	111
7.2.2	QED final state radiation effects . . . . .	115
7.2.3	Final acceptance $\times$ efficiencies . . . . .	116
7.3	Charge mis-identification . . . . .	116
7.3.1	Effect of charge mis-identification . . . . .	116
7.3.2	Determination of Charge mis-identification . . . . .	120
7.4	Unfolding procedure and Closure test . . . . .	123
7.4.1	First closure test on the unfolding method . . . . .	123
7.4.1.1	Applying detector resolution unfolding . . . . .	125
7.4.1.2	Applying detector resolution and acc $\times$ eff unfolding . . . . .	125
7.4.1.3	Applying detector resolution, acc $\times$ eff and charge mis- ID rate . . . . .	125

## CONTENTS

---

7.4.2	Second closure test on the unfolding method . . . . .	127
7.4.3	Third closure test on the unfolding method . . . . .	128
<b>8</b>	<b>Forward-Backward Charge Asymmetry measurement</b>	<b>129</b>
8.1	Bias due to the unfolding method . . . . .	129
8.2	Data unfolding . . . . .	133
8.3	Uncertainties . . . . .	136
8.3.1	Systematic uncertainty from efficiency scale factors . . . . .	136
8.3.2	Systematic uncertainty from efficiency difference between forward and backward events . . . . .	136
8.3.3	Systematic uncertainty from energy scale and energy resolution	139
8.3.4	Systematic uncertainty from PDF . . . . .	139
8.3.5	Systematic uncertainty from higher order corrections . . . . .	139
8.3.6	Systematic uncertainty from background subtraction . . . . .	145
8.3.7	Systematic uncertainty due to full MC statistics . . . . .	145
8.3.8	Systematic uncertainty from acceptance $\times$ efficiency corrections	148
8.3.9	Systematic uncertainty from charge misID . . . . .	150
8.3.10	Systematic uncertainty from the input $A_{FB}$ distribution . . . . .	150
8.3.11	Uncertainties distribution . . . . .	150
8.4	Comparison of $A_{FB}$ between corrected data and PYTHIA predictions . .	151
<b>9</b>	<b>Weak Mixing angle measurement</b>	<b>157</b>
9.1	Bin centering . . . . .	157
9.2	Reweighting GEANT MC samples to different input $\sin^2 \theta_W$ . . . . .	157

9.3	Extraction of $\sin^2 \theta_W$ using PYTHIA . . . . .	158
9.4	Correction of the extracted $\sin^2 \theta_W$ using ZGRAD . . . . .	166
9.5	Final extracted $\sin^2 \theta_W$ value . . . . .	166
<b>10 <math>Z</math> to light <i>quark</i> couplings measurement</b>		<b>169</b>
10.1	Extraction method . . . . .	169
10.1.1	RESBOS modifications for the measurement of $Z$ -light quark couplings . . . . .	170
10.2	Extraction of couplings . . . . .	171
10.2.1	Couplings of $Z$ to $u/d$ quark . . . . .	171
<b>11 Differential cross section measurement</b>		<b>175</b>
11.1	Introduction of differential cross section . . . . .	175
11.2	Theoretical prediction . . . . .	176
11.3	Unfolding . . . . .	177
11.4	Uncertainties . . . . .	179
11.4.1	Systematic uncertainty from efficiency scale factors . . . . .	180
11.4.2	Systematic uncertainty from energy scale and energy smear . . . . .	180
11.4.3	Systematic uncertainty from PDF . . . . .	181
11.4.4	Systematic uncertainty from FSR . . . . .	184
11.4.5	Systematic uncertainty from background subtraction . . . . .	186
11.4.6	Systematic uncertainty due to acceptance method . . . . .	188
11.4.7	Systematic uncertainty due to full MC statistics . . . . .	189
11.4.8	Statistical uncertainty after error correlations correction . . . . .	191

## CONTENTS

---

11.4.9	Uncertainties distribution . . . . .	192
11.5	Final results . . . . .	192
<b>12</b>	<b>Conclusion</b>	<b>195</b>
<b>A</b>	<b>Luminosity reweight and vertex reweight</b>	<b>197</b>
A.1	Luminosity reweight . . . . .	197
A.2	Vertex reweight . . . . .	197
<b>B</b>	<b>Comparison of <math>\cos \theta^*</math> for each mass bin</b>	<b>199</b>
B.1	Collin comparison in each mass bins . . . . .	199
<b>C</b>	<b>Calculation of correlation matrix</b>	<b>205</b>
C.1	Correlation matrix . . . . .	205
C.2	$\chi^2$ calculation . . . . .	209
<b>D</b>	<b>CCEC events: with or without EC track match</b>	<b>213</b>
D.1	A new EC cuts: trk-iso . . . . .	214
D.2	QCD shape . . . . .	215
D.3	Trk and NoTrk comparison . . . . .	216
<b>E</b>	<b>Electron energy modeling</b>	<b>223</b>
	<b>References</b>	<b>234</b>

# List of Figures

1.1	Higher-order corrections to the gauge boson propagators due to boson and fermion loops. . . . .	13
1.2	Vertex corrections to the process $e^+e^- \rightarrow b\bar{b}$ at LEP. . . . .	13
1.3	Constraints on the mass of the Higgs boson from each pseudo-observable. The Higgs-boson mass and its 68% CL uncertainty is obtained from a five-parameter SM fit to the observable.. . . .	16
1.4	Comparison of the effective electroweak mixing angle $\sin^2\theta_W$ from LEP and SLC. Also shown is the SM prediction for $\sin^2\theta_W$ as a function of $m_H$ . The additional uncertainty of the SM prediction is shown as the bands. . . . .	17
1.5	DØRunI published $120 \text{ pb}^{-1} d\sigma/dM$ results. . . . .	18
1.6	DØ RunII published $1.1 \text{ fb}^{-1}$ results. The left plot is the $A_{FB}$ results, and right one is measured $\sin^2\theta_W$ results. . . . .	18
1.7	$Z$ to $u/d$ quark couplings from other experiments. The Red contour is CDF RunII[27] results, green contour is LEP[21] results, the pink region is results from H1 experiment, Blue and yellow region is results from ZEUS experiment. . . . .	19
1.8	The lowest-order $s$ -channel Feynman diagrams for $f\bar{f} \rightarrow Z/\gamma^* \rightarrow e^+e^-$ . . . .	19

## LIST OF FIGURES

---

1.9	The Collins-Soper reference frame. . . . .	22
1.10	$\cos \theta^*$ and di-electron invariant mass distribution (Red for forward events and Blue for backward events) for $Z/\gamma^* \rightarrow ee$ events generated with PYTHIA. . .	23
1.11	$A_{FB}$ as a function of the di-lepton invariant mass for $Z/\gamma^* \rightarrow ee$ events generated with PYTHIA. . . . .	23
1.12	The standard model tree level prediction of the forward-backward asymmetry as a function of $e^+e^-$ invariant mass for $u\bar{u} \rightarrow e^+e^-$ and $d\bar{d} \rightarrow e^+e^-$ . [20] . .	24
2.1	The general layout of the collider facility at Fermilab. . . . .	27
2.2	Tevatron bunch scheme for Run I (top) and Run II (bottom). . . . .	28
2.3	A view of the DØ Run II upgraded detector. . . . .	31
2.4	Cross-sectional view of the DØ tracking volume. . . . .	32
2.5	DØ Run II Silicon Microstrip Tracker detector. . . . .	33
2.6	(a) A quarter $r - z$ view of the CFT detector showing the nested eight barrel design. (b) A magnified $r - \phi$ end view of the two doublet layer configuration for two different barrels. . . . .	34
2.7	Cross-sectional end view (left) and side view (right) of the Central Preshower Detector. . . . .	35
2.8	One quarter view of the Forward Preshower Detector. . . . .	36
2.9	Overall view of the calorimeter system. . . . .	37
2.10	Side-view of one quarter of the DØ calorimeter system, showing segmentation and tower definitions. The line extending from the center of the detector denote the pseudorapidity coverage of cells and projected towers. . .	39
2.11	Calorimeter channel configuration in terms of depth and $\eta$ . . . . .	40

## LIST OF FIGURES

---

2.12 Schematic view of a representative calorimeter unit cell. The gap structure, grounded absorber plates, and signal boards are shown. . . . .	41
2.13 Schematic of the primary elements for the DØ calorimeter electronics. . . . .	44
2.14 Electronics signal shape from the calorimeter cell, after the preamplifier and after the shaper. . . . .	45
4.1 Diem trigger OR efficiency versus invariant mass, electron/positron $p_T$ . . . . .	50
4.2 Invariant mass, $\cos\theta^*$ , electron/positron $p_T$ and detector $\eta$ distributions for CC-CC candidates. . . . .	55
4.3 Invariant mass, $\cos\theta^*$ , electron/positron $p_T$ and detector $\eta$ distributions for CC-EC candidates. . . . .	56
5.1 Invariant mass distribution of $Z/\gamma^*$ boson for the GEANT MC samples we used. The left and right plots show number of events before and after taking into account different integrated luminosities for five different mass regions. . . . .	61
5.2 Pre-selection efficiencies (CC region) versus EM cluster $p_T$ , detector $\eta$ , detector $\phi$ , $V_{tx_Z}$ , invariant mass and collin angle of GEANT MC $Z \rightarrow ee$ and EM inclusive data respectively. . . . .	64
5.3 Pre-selection efficiencies (EC region) versus EM cluster $p_T$ , detector $\eta$ , detector $\phi$ , $V_{tx_Z}$ invariant mass and collin angle of GEANT MC $Z \rightarrow ee$ events and EM inclusive data respectively. . . . .	65
5.4 The ratio of electron PreSelection ID efficiency between data and MC as a function of EM cluster detector $\eta$ . . . . .	66

## LIST OF FIGURES

---

5.5	electron ID efficiencies (CC region) versus EM cluster $p_T$ , detector $\eta$ , detector $\phi$ , $V_{tx\_Z}$ , invariant mass and collin angle of GEANT MC $Z \rightarrow ee$ and EM inclusive data respectively. . . . .	67
5.6	electron ID efficiencies (EC region) versus EM cluster $p_T$ , detector $\eta$ , detector $\phi$ , $V_{tx\_Z}$ , invariant mass and collin angle of GEANT MC $Z \rightarrow ee$ and EM inclusive data respectively. . . . .	68
5.7	The ratio of electron EMID efficiency between data and MC as a function of EM cluster detector $\eta$ . . . . .	69
5.8	Track match efficiencies versus EM cluster $p_T$ , physics $\eta$ , $V_{tx\_Z}$ , invariant mass and collin angle of GEANT MC $Z \rightarrow ee$ and EM inclusive data respectively. For real data, the efficiency is lower for physics $\eta$ close to 0, this is due to the CFT light yield. The structure shown with $v_{tx\_Z}$ is due to number of SMT hits requirement, the six regions correspond to six SMT barrels. . . . .	70
5.9	The ratio of electron track match efficiency between data and MC as a function of physics $\eta$ and $v_{tx\_Z}$ . . . . .	71
5.10	Electron $EOP$ (electron $E_t$ over electron $p_T$ ) mean values for difference instlum bins. . . . .	75
5.11	Ratio of PreSelection efficiencies for forward and backward events in CC region versus EM cluster $p_T$ , detector $\eta$ , detector $\phi$ and Mass of GEANT MC $Z \rightarrow ee$ and data respectively. The $\chi^2/ndof$ for those four plots are 15.8/20, 22.7/32, 5.6/14 and 52/40. . . . .	77

<p>5.12 Ratio of PreSelection efficiencies for forward and backward events in EC region versus EM cluster <math>p_T</math>, detector <math>\eta</math>, detector <math>\phi</math> and Mass of GEANT MC <math>Z \rightarrow ee</math> and data respectively. The <math>\chi^2/\text{ndof}</math> for those four plots are 16.4/20, 29.7/32, 6.3/9 and 36.4/32 . . . . .</p>	78
<p>5.13 Ratio of EMID efficiencies for forward and backward events in CC region versus EM cluster <math>p_T</math>, detector <math>\eta</math>, detector <math>\phi</math> and Mass of GEANT MC <math>Z \rightarrow ee</math> and data respectively. The <math>\chi^2/\text{ndof}</math> for those four plots are 26.6/20, 39.1/32, 7.76/11 and 36.4/40 . . . . .</p>	79
<p>5.14 Ratio of EMID efficiencies for forward and backward events in EC region versus EM cluster <math>p_T</math>, detector <math>\eta</math>, detector <math>\phi</math> and Mass of GEANT MC <math>Z \rightarrow ee</math> and data respectively. The <math>\chi^2/\text{ndof}</math> for those four plots are 14.0/20, 38.5/32, 12.6/9 and 23.9/32 . . . . .</p>	80
<p>5.15 Ratio of electrons track match efficiencies for forward and backward events (CC only) versus EM cluster <math>p_T</math>, physics <math>\eta</math>, physics <math>\phi</math> and Mass of GEANT MC <math>Z \rightarrow ee</math> and data respectively. The <math>\chi^2/\text{ndof}</math> for those four plots are 21.2/26, 30.1/32, 13.0/11 and 41.0/32 . . . . .</p>	81
<p>6.1 QCD background shapes for different HMx cuts in CCCC (Left) and CCEC (Right). For CCCC plot, Red line for <math>\text{HMx7} &gt; 12</math>, Blue line for <math>\text{HMx7} &gt; 20</math> and Black line for <math>\text{HMx7} &gt; 50</math>. For CCEC plot, Red line for <math>\text{HMx7} &gt; 30</math> in CC and <math>\text{HMx8} &gt; 40</math> in EC, Blue line for <math>\text{HMx7} &gt; 12</math> in CC and <math>\text{HMx8} &gt; 20</math> in EC, Black line for <math>\text{HMx7} &gt; 50</math> in CC and <math>\text{HMx8} &gt; 75</math> in EC. The shape difference is propagated to the final <math>A_{FB}</math> systematic uncertainty. . . . .</p>	89

## LIST OF FIGURES

---

6.2	QCD background shapes for CCCC(Left) and CCEC(Right). There is no peak around $Z$ peak region, which means we get a pure QCD sample, no contamination from $Z \rightarrow ee$ . . . . .	89
6.3	Invariant mass comparison for CC-CC and CC-EC events and also the ratio between data and signal + backgrounds. The discontinuity in the mass distribution is due to different bin size. The KS probabilities are 0.9996 and 0.4860 for CC-CC and CC-EC. . . . .	98
6.4	$\cos \theta^*$ distribution for CC-CC and CC-EC events and also the ratio between data and signal + backgrounds. The KS probabilities are 0.995 and 0.026 for CC-CC and CC-EC. . . . .	99
6.5	Electron/positron $p_T$ comparison for CC-CC and CC-EC events. The KS probabilities are 0.153 and 0.115 for CC-CC and CC-EC. . . . .	99
6.6	Electron/positron detector $\eta$ comparison for CC-CC and CC-EC events. The KS probabilities are 0.213 and 0.136 for CC-CC and CC-EC. . . . .	100
6.7	Electron/positron detector $\phi$ comparison for CC-CC and CC-EC events. The KS probabilities are 0.334 and 0.493 for CC-CC and CC-EC. . . . .	100
6.8	CC (no EC electrons included) Electron/positron track PhiMod comparison for CC-CC and CC-EC events. The KS probabilities are 0.981 and 0.314. Since we only cut on the track PhiMod for electrons in CC, we do not care about PhiMod distribution in EC. . . . .	101
6.9	$Z$ boson $p_T$ comparison for CC-CC and CC-EC events at low mass region(50-75 GeV). . . . .	101

6.10 Vtx-Z comparison for CC-CC and CC-EC events. The KS function probabilities are 0.479 and 0.069 for CC-CC and CC-EC. . . . .	102
6.11 $\cos \theta^*$ comparison for CC-CC and CC-EC events in the low mass region ( $60 < M < 75$ GeV). In this mass region, $A_{FB}$ is negative, and we observe more backward events ( $\cos \theta^* < 0$ ) than forward events ( $\cos \theta^* > 0$ ). The worse overall $\chi^2$ for CC-EC events mainly comes from the seventh and eighth bins and also the seventh bin from the last. The KS probabilities are 1. and 0.857 for CC-CC and CC-EC. . . . .	103
6.12 $\cos \theta^*$ comparison for CC-CC and CC-EC events in the middle mass region ( $75 < M < 105$ GeV). In this mass region, $A_{FB}$ is close to 0, and we observe similar number of backward events ( $\cos \theta^* < 0$ ) and forward events ( $\cos \theta^* > 0$ ). The KS probabilities are 0.959 and 0.046 for CC-CC and CC-EC. . . . .	103
6.13 $\cos \theta^*$ comparison for CC-CC and CC-EC events in high mass region ( $105 < M < 500$ GeV). In this mass region, $A_{FB}$ is positive, and we observe more forward events ( $\cos \theta^* > 0$ ) than backward events ( $\cos \theta^* < 0$ ). The worse overall $\chi^2$ for CC-EC events mainly comes from the second, third and the last bins. The KS probabilities are 0.931 and 0.474 for CC-CC and CC-EC. . . . .	104
6.14 $M_{ee}$ and $\cos \theta^*$ distributions between data and Signal+backgrounds. . . . .	105
7.1 Response matrix for CC-CC events. The axes are labeled by the $M_{ee}$ bin number where bin 1 is the lowest mass bin and bin 12 is the highest mass bin. The four plots are for $R_{ij}^{FF}$ , $R_{ij}^{BB}$ , $R_{ij}^{BF}$ and $R_{ij}^{FB}$ respectively. The definition of each response matrix element can be found in the text. . . . .	109

## LIST OF FIGURES

---

- 7.2 Response matrix for CC-EC events. The axes are labeled by the  $M_{ee}$  bin number where bin 1 is the lowest mass bin and bin 12 is the highest mass bin. The four plots are for  $R_{ij}^{FF}$ ,  $R_{ij}^{BB}$ ,  $R_{ij}^{BF}$  and  $R_{ij}^{FB}$  respectively. The definition of each response matrix element can be found in the text. . . . . 110
- 7.3 Effects of kinematic and geometric cuts on  $\cos\theta^*$  (Left) and  $A_{FB}$  (Right) distributions using PYTHIA generator-level information ( $50 < M < 500$  GeV). The red curve is without any cuts, the green curve is with  $p_T > 25$  GeV requirement on both electron and positron, the black curve is with physics  $\eta$  requirements ( $|\eta| < 1$  (PhiMod cut also applied) or  $1.5 < |\eta| < 2.5$ , no EC-EC events) on both electron and positron, and the blue curve is with both  $p_T$  and acceptance cuts applied. . . . . 112
- 7.4 Effects of kinematic and geometric cuts on and  $A_{FB}$  distribution using PYTHIA generator-level information. The red curve is without any cuts, the green curve is with  $p_T > 25$  GeV requirement on both electron and positron, the black curve is with physics  $\eta$  requirements ( $|\eta| < 1$  (PhiMod cut also applied) or  $1.5 < |\eta| < 2.5$ , no EC-EC events) on both electron and positron, and the blue curve is with both  $p_T$  and acceptance cuts applied. . . . . 113
- 7.5 Effects of kinematic and geometric cuts on and  $A_{FB}$  distribution using PYTHIA generator-level information. Same information as Fig. 7.4 except the  $x$ -axis is plotted at log scale. . . . . 114

7.6	Effects of electron-photon merging cone size on $A_{FB}$ using PYTHIA generator-level information. The kinematic and geometric cuts described before already applied for all histograms. For the left plot, we compare the $A_{FB}$ with electron-photon merging cone size $R = 0.3$ (Blue curve) and without electron-photon merging (Red curve). For the right plot, we compare the $A_{FB}$ with electron-photon merging cone size $R = 0.3$ (Blue curve) and with electron-photon merging cone size $R = 0.2$ (Red curve). . . . .	115
7.7	Acceptances $\times$ efficiencies for CC-CC (top left) and CC-EC (top right) and both (bottom left) events. For acceptances $\times$ efficiencies calculation, the denominator is the total number of generated $Z/\gamma^* \rightarrow ee$ events and the numerator is the number of events passed the offline selections. . .	117
7.8	Invariant mass distributions for same-sign and opposite-sign events in data (left) and GEANT MC (right). . . . .	121
7.9	Data (blue) and GEANT MC (red) charge misID rate as a function of invariant mass. . . . .	122
7.10	Data (blue) and GEANT MC (red) charge misID rate as a function of invariant mass. The charge misID rate in GEANT MC is rescaled to match with data at $Z$ -pole. The left plot is for the whole mass region and the right plot is for $50 < M < 130$ GeV. . . . .	123
7.11	Applying detector resolution unfolding on Geant MC sample, for CC-CC and CC-EC events. . . . .	125
7.12	Applying detector resolution and acc $\times$ eff unfolding on Geant MC sample, for CC-CC and CC-EC events. . . . .	126

## LIST OF FIGURES

---

7.13	Differences between the truth $A_{FB}$ from PYTHIA and $A_{FB}$ after all corrections applied for CC-CC and CC-EC events. . . . .	126
7.14	Comparison between changed generate-level $A_{FB}$ and unfolded $A_{FB}$ of Geant MC sample, for CC-CC and CC-EC events. . . . .	127
7.15	Differences between the truth $A_{FB}$ from PYTHIA and $A_{FB}$ after all corrections applied for CC-CC and CC-EC events. . . . .	128
8.1	Difference between the PYTHIA predicted and unfolded $A_{FB}$ for $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.22702$ (Left) and $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.23702$ (Right) but using the response matrix, acc $\times$ eff corrections measured from events generated with $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.23152$ . . . . .	132
8.2	Difference between the PYTHIA predicted and unfolded $A_{FB}$ for $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.22702$ (Left) and $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.23702$ (Right) but using the response matrix, acc $\times$ eff corrections derived from events generated with the best measured $\sin^2 \theta_W$ values: $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.2272$ and $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.2355$ . . . . .	132
8.3	Data raw $A_{FB}$ and after detector resolution unfolding $A_{FB}$ for CC-CC and CC-EC events. . . . .	133
8.4	Data after detector resolution unfolding $A_{FB}$ and after detector resolution and Acc $\times$ eff unfolding $A_{FB}$ for CC-CC and CC-EC events. . . . .	134
8.5	Data raw $A_{FB}$ and after all corrections $A_{FB}$ for CC-CC and CC-EC events. . . . .	134
8.6	Left: $A_{FB}$ predictions from the default PYTHIA (Red) and PYTHIA with tuned $Z$ boson $p_T$ distribution (Blue). Right: $A_{FB}$ distribution from the default PYTHIA (Red) and PYTHIA with internal bremsstrahlung turned off but later pass through PHOTOS for FSR simulation (Blue). . . . .	144
8.7	$A_{FB}$ predictions from ZGRAD (Red) and PYTHIA (Blue). . . . .	145

8.8	Comparison between statistics and all systematic uncertainties described in Chapter 10. . . . .	153
8.9	$A_{FB}$ for data after all corrections and PYTHIA prediction for CCCC, CCEC and All events. . . . .	154
8.10	$A_{FB}$ for data after all corrections and PYTHIA prediction for CCCC, CCEC and All in $50 < M < 130$ GeV. . . . .	155
9.1	Electron and positron physics $\eta$ distribution before $M_{Z/\gamma^*} - \cos\theta^*$ reweight, Blue for $\sin^2\theta_W = 0.2315$ and Red for $\sin^2\theta_W = 0.2375$ . The bottom plot is $\chi$ distribution between the two histograms. . . . .	159
9.2	Electron and positron physics $\eta$ distribution before $M_{Z/\gamma^*} - \cos\theta^*$ reweight, Blue for $\sin^2\theta_W = 0.2315$ and Red for $\sin^2\theta_W = 0.2375$ . The bottom plot is $\chi$ distribution between the two histograms. . . . .	160
9.3	Comparisons plots between data raw $A_{FB}$ and MC raw $A_{FB}$ . . . . .	161
9.4	$\chi^2$ between the raw $A_{FB}$ from real data and the predicted “measured” $A_{FB}$ from GEANT MC as a function of the input $\sin^2\theta_W$ in the GEANT MC sample. The black line is a second-order polynomial fit. . . . .	162
9.5	The difference between the extracted $\sin^2\theta_W$ from each PDF set and the central PDF set for 40 CTEQ6.1M PDF sets. . . . .	163
9.6	$\sin^2\theta_W$ comparison between different experiments. . . . .	167

## LIST OF FIGURES

---

10.1	$Z$ to $u/d$ quark couplings results. The blue star is SM value, the red region is the measured 68.3% confidence level contour due to statistical uncertainty, the green region is the systematic uncertainty, the blue plus is the point with best $\chi^2$ .	171
10.2	$Z$ to $u/d$ quark couplings results from DØ , CDF, ZEUS, H1 and LEP.	173
11.1	PYTHIA prediction(with k-factor) differential cross section( $d\sigma/dM$ ).	176
11.2	$\varepsilon \times \beta$ distribution for CCCC and CCEC events.	177
11.3	Measured normalized differential cross section( $\frac{1}{\sigma} \times \frac{d\sigma}{dM}$ ) for CCCC, CCEC and both CCCC and CCEC events.	178
11.4	Comparison between statistics and all systematic uncertainties described in Chapter 13.	193
A.1	Comparison of instantaneous luminosity between data and GEANT MC before (Left) and after (Right) luminosity reweighting.	198
A.2	Comparison of primary vertex distributions between data and GEANT MC before (Left) and after (Right) vertex reweighting.	198
B.1	$\cos \theta^*$ comparison in mass region (50-60 GeV)	199
B.2	$\cos \theta^*$ comparison in mass region (60-70 GeV)	200
B.3	$\cos \theta^*$ comparison in mass region (70-75 GeV)	200
B.4	$\cos \theta^*$ comparison in mass region (75-81 GeV)	200
B.5	$\cos \theta^*$ comparison in mass region (81-86.5 GeV)	201
B.6	$\cos \theta^*$ comparison in mass region (86.5-89.5 GeV)	201
B.7	$\cos \theta^*$ comparison in mass region (89.5-92 GeV)	201

**LIST OF FIGURES**

---

B.8	cos $\theta^*$ comparsion in mass region (92-97 GeV) . . . . .	202
B.9	cos $\theta^*$ comparsion in mass region (97-105 GeV) . . . . .	202
B.10	cos $\theta^*$ comparsion in mass region (105-115 GeV) . . . . .	202
B.11	cos $\theta^*$ comparsion in mass region (115-130 GeV) . . . . .	203
B.12	cos $\theta^*$ comparsion in mass region (130-180 GeV) . . . . .	203
B.13	cos $\theta^*$ comparsion in mass region (180-250 GeV) . . . . .	203
B.14	cos $\theta^*$ comparsion in mass region (250-500 GeV) . . . . .	204
C.1	Correlation matrix for CCCC, CCEC and both of CCCC and CCEC events.	208
D.1	Comparison of EC isolation, EMF, events MET and trk-iso of data, full MC and QCD background. MET and trk-iso distribution are get from events which passed RunIIa CC-EC selection cuts. . . . .	214
D.2	Invariant mass comparison for CC-EC events and also the ratio between data and signal + backgrounds. Left two plots are results of Trk events, Right two plots are results of NoTrk events. . . . .	215
D.3	Top-Left is QCD shape of Trk events; Top-Right is QCD shape of NoTrk events; Bottom-Left is comparison of NoTrk and Trk, both of them are nor- malized into black line; Bottom-Right is the logx scale of Bottom-Left plots.	216
D.4	Invariant mass comparison for CC-EC events and also the ratio between data and signal + backgrounds. Left two plots are results of Trk events, Right two plots are results of NoTrk events. . . . .	219

## LIST OF FIGURES

---

D.5	Top two plots are comparison plots of raw $A_{FB}$ between Trk, NoTrk and All. Bottom two plots are comparison plots of unfolded $A_{FB}$ between Trk, NoTrk and All. For $W + X$ backgrounds contribution, we use both <i>Pythia</i> and <i>Alpgen</i> $W + X$ samples, left two plots are results with <i>Pythia</i> $W + X$ samples; right two plots are results with <i>Alpgen</i> $W + X$ samples. There is no big difference between Left and Right plots. . . . .	220
D.6	MC Raw $A_{FB}$ comparison for CC-EC events. Left plot is raw $A_{FB}$ comparison, Right plot is unfolded $A_{FB}$ comparison. The first two mass bins have very poor statistics, difference between data and MC are mainly come from statistics. . . . .	221
E.1	Electron non-linearity parameters, the black cross corresponds to the best fitted values, the blue contour is 68% contour for $\alpha$ and $\gamma$ . The left plot is for CC electron, and the right one is for EC electron. . . . .	224
E.2	Linearity and non-linearity energy correction comparison for Geant MC CCCC events. The top plot is InvMass distribution comparison between linearity and non-linearity correction, the bottom plot is the scale factor between linearity InvMass and non-linearity InvMass. . . . .	225
E.3	Linearity and non-linearity energy correction comparison for Geant MC CCEC events. The top plot is InvMass distribution comparison between linearity and non-linearity correction, the bottom plot is the scale factor between linearity InvMass and non-linearity InvMass. . . . .	226

# Chapter 1

## Introduction

### 1.1 Standard Model

One of the main goals of particle physics is to understand what matter is made of, and what are the forces in nature through which matter interacts. Our current understanding of the fundamental forces is contained in the description of the gravitational, the strong, the weak and the electromagnetic interactions among elementary particles. These forces are transmitted by specific fields or particles which are equivalent concepts in relativistic quantum field theory.

In the 1960s, S.L. Glashow, A. Salam and S. Weinberg unified the electromagnetic and weak interactions into the electroweak theory [1], which, together with Quantum Chromodynamics (the theory of the strong interaction) [2], forms the Standard Model (SM) of particle physics. The SM is a quantum field theory that includes  $SU(3)_C$  color symmetry of strong interaction, and  $SU(2)_W \times U(1)_Y$  weak isospin doublet and supercharge symmetry of electroweak interaction. The SM provides a very elegant

# 1. INTRODUCTION

---

theoretical framework and it has successfully passed very precise tests [3].

Both electroweak and QCD theories are gauge field theories, meaning that they model the forces between fermions by coupling them to bosons which mediate the forces. The Lagrangian of each set of mediating bosons is invariant under gauge transformation, so these mediating bosons are referred to as gauge bosons. The eight massless gluons,  $g_\alpha$ , mediate strong interactions among quarks. The massless photon,  $\gamma$ , is the exchange particle in electromagnetic interactions, and the three massive weak bosons,  $W^\pm$  and  $Z$ , are the corresponding intermediate bosons that mediate the weak interaction. Table 1.1 summarizes the fundamental forces and the properties of their gauge bosons [4].

Force	Boson Name	Symbol	Charge ( $ e $ )	Spin	Mass ( $\text{GeV}/c^2$ )
Strong	Gluon	$g$	0	1	0
Electromagnetic	Photon	$\gamma$	0	1	0
Weak	W-boson	$W^\pm$	$\pm 1$	1	$80.423 \pm 0.039$
	Z-boson	$Z^0$	0	1	$91.1876 \pm 0.0021$
Gravitational	Graviton	$G$	0	2	0

Table 1.1: Fundamental forces and gauge bosons.

Apart from the gauge bosons, there are six leptons and six quarks. The six leptons are electron,  $\mu$ ,  $\tau$  and the corresponding neutrinos; the six quarks are up, down, charm, strange, bottom, and top quarks. These six leptons and six quarks are fermions of spin  $s = \frac{1}{2}$  and can be grouped into three generations (also called families) as shown

## 1.1 Standard Model

---

in Table 1.2. As we know, the weak charged current interaction is parity-violating, and connects, for example, the left-handed (LH) states of neutrino and electron. On the other hand the electromagnetic interaction is parity-conserving and involves both LH and RH states of the electron. Hence we have to assign the lepton states to a LH doublet and a RH singlet, as follows (here we just consider the case of the first generation leptons: electron and electron neutrino)

$$R_e = (e)_R \tag{1.1}$$

$$L_e = \begin{pmatrix} \nu_e \\ e^- \end{pmatrix}_L$$

where the LH and RH components of a field  $\psi$  are defined by

$$\psi_R = \frac{1 - \gamma_5}{2} \psi \tag{1.2}$$

$$\psi_L = \frac{1 + \gamma_5}{2} \psi \tag{1.3}$$

here  $\gamma_5$  is the chirality operator. The charged currents are thus defined as

$$J_\mu^+ = \bar{\nu} \gamma_\mu \frac{1 + \gamma_5}{2} e = \bar{\nu}_L \gamma_\mu e_L = \bar{\psi}_L \gamma_\mu \tau^+ \psi_L \tag{1.4}$$

and

$$J_\mu^- = \bar{e} \gamma_\mu \frac{1 + \gamma_5}{2} \nu = \bar{e}_L \gamma_\mu \nu_L = \bar{\psi}_L \gamma_\mu \tau^- \psi_L \tag{1.5}$$

where  $\tau^\pm = \tau_1 \pm \tau_2$  are the Pauli operators suitable for describing  $I = 1/2$  systems,  $\gamma_\mu$  are Dirac matrices. The neutral current will be

$$J_\mu^{(3)} = \bar{\psi}_L \gamma_\mu \tau_3 \psi_L = \bar{\psi} \gamma_\mu \frac{1 + \gamma_5}{2} I_3 \psi = \frac{1}{2} (\bar{\nu}_L \gamma_\mu \nu_L - \bar{e}_L \gamma_\mu e_L) \tag{1.6}$$

## 1. INTRODUCTION

---

Generation	Leptons (spin= $\frac{1}{2}$ )		
	Flavors	Charge ( $ e $ )	Mass (MeV/ $c^2$ )
1	$e$	-1	0.511
	$\nu_e$	0	$< 3 \times 10^{-6}$
2	$\mu$	-1	105.66
	$\nu_\mu$	0	$< 0.19$
3	$\tau$	-1	$1776.99 \pm 0.29$
	$\nu_\tau$	0	$< 18.2$
	Quarks (spin= $\frac{1}{2}$ )		
	Flavors	Charge ( $ e $ )	Mass (MeV/ $c^2$ )
1	$u$	$+2/3$	1.5 – 5
	$d$	$-1/3$	3 – 9
2	$c$	$+2/3$	$(1.0 - 1.4) \times 10^3$
	$s$	$-1/3$	60 – 170
3	$t$	$+2/3$	$(178.0 \pm 4.3) \times 10^3$
	$b$	$-1/3$	$(4.0 - 4.5) \times 10^3$

Table 1.2: Three generations of elementary particles.

The electroweak theory is the unified description of two fundamental interactions: electromagnet interaction and the weak interaction. These two forces appear very different at low energies, but above the unification energy, on the order of 100 GeV, they would merge into a single electroweak interaction. During 1960s, S.L. Glashow, A. Salam, and S. Weinberg [1] unified the weak and electromagnetic. And more important thing, the renormalizable of electroweak theory [5][6] make this theory has the predictive power. The theory predicted the existence of neutral currents and  $W$  and  $Z$  gauge bosons. In 1973 Weak Neutral Currents(WNC) were discovered simultaneously by two neutrino experiments at CERN [7] and Fermilab [8], and within a few years the first measurements of  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  was made [9]. In 1983 the discovery of the  $W$  and  $Z$  gauge bosons[10] proved possible to measure their masses with great precision, which has allowed a stringent comparison of the electroweak theory with experiment.

The electroweak interaction is based on an  $SU(2)$  group of “weak isospin”,  $I$ , and a  $U(1)$  group of “weak hypercharge”,  $Y$ . The Lagrangian energy density of fermions with the fields  $\mathbf{W}_\mu$  and  $B_\mu$  is the product of the fermion currents with the fields, that is, of the form [12] [13]

$$L = g \mathbf{J}_\mu \bullet \mathbf{W}_\mu + g' J_\mu^Y B_\mu \quad (1.7)$$

where  $\mathbf{J}_\mu$  and  $J_\mu^Y$  represent respectively the isospin and hypercharge currents of the fermions, and  $g, g'$  are the couplings of fermions to  $\mathbf{W}_\mu$  and  $B_\mu$ . If we define the weak hypercharge as  $Y = Q - I_3$ , where  $Q$  is the electric charge and  $I_3$  the third component of weak isospin, then the corresponding relation among the currents is

$$J_\mu^Y = J_\mu^{em} - J_\mu^{(3)} \quad (1.8)$$

where  $J_\mu^{em}$  is the electromagnetic current, coupling to the charge  $Q$ , and  $J_\mu^{(3)}$  is the

## 1. INTRODUCTION

---

third component of the isospin current  $\mathbf{J}_\mu$ .

The Lagrangian is thus

$$L = g\mathbf{J}_\mu \bullet \mathbf{W}_\mu + g'J_\mu^Y B_\mu \quad (1.9)$$

$$= g(J_\mu^{(1)}W_\mu^{(1)} + J_\mu^{(2)}W_\mu^{(2)}) + g(J_\mu^{(3)}W_\mu^{(3)}) + g'(J_\mu^{em} - J_\mu^{(3)})B_\mu \quad (1.10)$$

where  $W_\mu^{(i)}$ ,  $i = 1, 2, 3$ , are the weak bosons of the  $SU(2)_L$  group, and  $B_\mu$  is the hypercharge boson of the  $U(1)_Y$  group. The physical bosons consist of the charged particles  $W_\mu^\pm$  and the neutrals  $Z_\mu$  and  $A_\mu$ . Thus, if we set

$$W_\mu^\pm = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}(W_\mu^{(1)} \pm iW_\mu^{(2)}) \quad (1.11)$$

then

$$L = (g/\sqrt{2})(J_\mu^- W_\mu^+ + J_\mu^+ W_\mu^-) + J_\mu^{(3)}(gW_\mu^{(3)} - g'B_\mu) + J_\mu^{em} g' B_\mu \quad (1.12)$$

$$= \frac{g}{\sqrt{2}}(J_\mu^- W_\mu^+ + J_\mu^+ W_\mu^-) + \frac{g}{\cos \theta_W}(J_\mu^{(3)} - \sin^2 \theta_W J_\mu^{em})Z_\mu + g \sin \theta_W J_\mu^{em} A_\mu \quad (1.13)$$

$$= L_{CC} + L_{NC} + L_{em} \quad (1.14)$$

where  $J_\mu^\pm = J_\mu^{(1)} \pm iJ_\mu^{(2)}$  and the angle  $\theta_W$  is called the weak mixing angle (or Weinberg angle), this equation shows that the interaction contains the weak charge-changing current

$$L_{CC} = \frac{g}{\sqrt{2}}(J_\mu^- W_\mu^+ + J_\mu^+ W_\mu^-) \quad (1.15)$$

a weak neutral current

$$L_{NC} = \frac{g}{\cos \theta_W}(J_\mu^{(3)} - \sin^2 \theta_W J_\mu^{em})Z_\mu \quad (1.16)$$

and the electromagnetic current

$$L_{em} = g \sin \theta_W J_\mu^{em} A_\mu \quad (1.17)$$

for which we know the coupling to be  $e$ . Hence

$$e = g \sin \theta_W = g' \cos \theta_W \quad (1.18)$$

and

$$\sin \theta_W = \frac{g'}{\sqrt{g^2 + g'^2}}, \quad (1.19)$$

$$\cos \theta_W = \frac{g}{\sqrt{g^2 + g'^2}} \quad (1.20)$$

In Vector and Axial-Vector( $V - A$ ) theory, the charged current matrix element is [14]

$$|M| = \frac{G}{\sqrt{2}} [\bar{e} \gamma_\mu (1 + \gamma_5) \nu] [\bar{\nu} \gamma_\mu (1 + \gamma_5) e] \quad (1.21)$$

where  $G$  is the Fermi coupling constant. Compared with the expressions 1.14, 1.4 and 1.5, in the limit of  $q^2 \ll M_W^2$ , we have

$$|M| = \left( \frac{g}{\sqrt{2}} \right)^2 \frac{1}{M_W^2} \left[ \bar{e} \gamma_\mu \frac{1 + \gamma_5}{2} \nu \right] \left[ \bar{\nu} \gamma_\mu \frac{1 + \gamma_5}{2} e \right] \quad (1.22)$$

so that

$$\frac{G}{\sqrt{2}} = \frac{g^2}{8M_W^2} \quad (1.23)$$

it follows that

$$M_W = \left( \frac{\sqrt{2} g^2}{8 G} \right)^{1/2} = \left( \frac{\sqrt{2} e^2}{8 G \sin^2 \theta_W} \right)^{1/2} \quad (1.24)$$

With given equations of  $W_\mu^{(3)}$  and  $B_\mu$ ,

$$W_\mu^{(3)} = \frac{gZ_\mu + g'A_\mu}{\sqrt{g^2 + g'^2}} \quad (1.25)$$

$$B_\mu = \frac{-g'Z_\mu + gA_\mu}{\sqrt{g^2 + g'^2}} \quad (1.26)$$

## 1. INTRODUCTION

---

we find

$$Z_\mu = W_\mu^{(3)} \cos \theta_W - B_\mu \sin \theta_W \quad (1.27)$$

$$A_\mu = W_\mu^{(3)} \sin \theta_W + B_\mu \cos \theta_W \quad (1.28)$$

so that, using the empirical fact that the photon is massless and orthogonal to the  $Z$ , we get

$$M_Z = \left( \frac{\sqrt{2} e^2}{8 G} \right)^{1/2} \frac{1}{\sin \theta_W \cos \theta_W} = \frac{M_W}{\cos \theta_W} \quad (1.29)$$

There are fundamental parameters in SM, which should be determined by experiment, conventionally can be chosen as  $\alpha$ ,  $G_F$ ,  $M_Z$ ,  $M_W$  and  $\sin^2 \theta_W$ . In the current structure of the SM, only three of them are independent, and the first most precise-measured three are chose as input. With given fine structure constant  $\alpha_{EM}$  ( $g^2 \sin^2 \theta_W / 4\pi$ ), the Fermi coupling constant  $G_F$ , and  $Z$  boson mass  $M_Z$ , the mass of  $W$  boson can be determined. Three measurable SM input parameters(not counting the Higgs boson mass,  $m_H$ , and the fermion masses and mixing.) is shown in the following

$$\alpha_{EM} = 1/(137.0359895 \pm 0.0000061) \quad (1.30)$$

$$G_F = 1.16639(\pm 0.00002) \times 10^{-5} \text{ GeV}^{-2} \quad (1.31)$$

$$M_Z = 91.1884 \pm 0.0022 \text{ GeV}/c^2 \quad (1.32)$$

The fine structure constant is measured from the quantum Hall effect [15]; the Fermi coupling constant is measured from the muon lifetime ( $\Gamma(\mu^- \rightarrow e^- \bar{\nu}_e \nu_\mu) = G^2 m_\mu^5 / (192\pi^3)$ ) [15], and  $M_Z$  is measured directly by the combined experiments at the CERN  $e^+e^-$  collider LEP [16]. In the SM at tree level, the relationship between the weak and electromagnetic couplings is given by where  $G_F$  is the Fermi constant,  $\alpha$

is the electromagnetic fine-structure constant,  $M_W$  is the  $W$  boson mass. With these inputs,  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  and the  $W$  boson mass  $M_W$  can be calculated with given  $m_t$  and  $m_H$ .  $m_H$  can be constrained by  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  and  $M_W$ , which is shown in Fig. 1.3.

## 1.2 Weak mixing angle

The weak mixing angle is an important parameter of the Standard Model. The value of  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  is depends on the renormalization prescription, according to the different dependence on the  $m_t$  and  $m_H$ , there are five schemes leading to values, which are shown in Table 1.3 and described below.

Scheme	Notation and Value
On-Shell	$s_W^2 = \sin^2 \theta_W \approx 0.2231$
NOV	$s_{M_Z}^2 = \sin^2 \theta_W \approx 0.2311$
$\overline{MS}$	$\hat{s}_Z^2 = \sin^2 \theta_W \approx 0.2312$
$\overline{MS}$ ND	$\hat{s}_{ND}^2 = \sin^2 \theta_W \approx 0.2314$
Effective	$\bar{s}_f^2 = \sin^2 \theta_W \approx 0.2315$

Table 1.3: The weak mixing angle value with difference schemes.

- At tree level it relates the masses of the  $W$  and  $Z$  bosons [23],

$$\sin^2 \theta_W \rightarrow s_W^2 = 1 - \frac{m_W^2}{m_Z^2} \quad (1.33)$$

- $s_{M_Z}^2$

## 1. INTRODUCTION

---

The  $s_{M_Z}^2$  [24] is obtained from  $M_Z$  by removing the  $(m_t, M_H)$  dependent term from  $\Delta r$ .

$$s_{M_Z}^2 c_{M_Z}^2 \equiv \frac{\pi\alpha(M_Z)}{\sqrt{2}G_F M_Z^2} \quad (1.34)$$

Given  $\alpha(M_Z)^{-1} = 128l.91 \pm 0.02$  yields  $s_{M_Z}^2 = 0.23108 \mp 0.00005$ . Since the  $m_t$  dependence has been removed by definition,  $s_{M_Z}^2$  has a smaller uncertainty than other schemas. However, the  $m_t$  uncertainty reemerges when other quantities are predicted in the terms of  $M_Z$ . Both  $s_W^2$  and  $s_{M_Z}^2$  depend not only on the gauge couplings but also on the spontaneous-symmetry breaking, and both definitions are awkward in the presence of any extension of SM which perturbs the value of  $M_Z$ (or  $M_W$ ).

- Modified minimal subtraction( $\overline{MS}$ )

The modified minimal subtraction( $\overline{MS}$ ) scheme introduces the quantity

$$\sin^2 \hat{\theta}_W(\mu) \equiv \frac{\hat{g}'^2}{\hat{g}^2(\mu) + \hat{g}'^2(\mu)} \quad (1.35)$$

where the couplings  $\hat{g}$  and  $\hat{g}'$  are defined by modified minimal subtraction and the scale  $\mu$  is chosen to be  $M_Z$  for many electroweak processes.  $\hat{s}_Z^2 = \sin^2 \hat{\theta}_W(M_Z)$  is extracted from  $M_Z$ , which is less sensitive to  $m_t$  and most types of new physics than other scheme, but it is also useful to comparing with the predictions of grand unification. According to whether or how finite  $\alpha \ln(m_t/M_Z)$  terms are decoupled, there are several variant definitions of  $\sin^2 \hat{\theta}_W(M_Z)$ .

- Non-decouple( $\hat{s}_{ND}^2$ )

## 1.2 Weak mixing angle

A variant  $\overline{MS}$  quantity  $\hat{s}_{ND}^2$  does not decouple the  $\alpha \ln(m_t/M_Z)$  terms [25]. It is related to  $\hat{s}_Z^2$  by

$$\hat{s}_Z^2 = \hat{s}_{ND}^2 / (1 + \frac{\alpha}{\pi} d) \quad (1.36)$$

$$d = \frac{1}{3} \left( \frac{1}{\hat{s}^2} - \frac{8}{3} \right) \left[ \left( 1 + \frac{\alpha_s}{\pi} \right) \ln \frac{m_t}{m_Z} - \frac{15\alpha_s}{8\pi} \right] \quad (1.37)$$

Thus,  $\hat{s}_Z^2 - \hat{s}_{ND}^2 \sim -0.0002$  for  $m_t = 172.7$  GeV.

- Effective  $\sin^2 \theta_{eff}$

As describe in Sec.1.1, the neutrals bosons  $Z_\mu$  and  $A_\mu$  can be written as:

$$\begin{pmatrix} A_\mu \\ Z_\mu \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} \cos \theta_W & \sin \theta_W \\ -\cos \theta_W & \cos \theta_W \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} B_\mu \\ W_\mu^{(3)} \end{pmatrix} \quad (1.38)$$

And the weak neutral current interaction term can be written as

$$- \frac{g}{2 \cos \theta_W} \sum_i \bar{\Psi}_i \gamma_\mu (g_V^i - g_A^i \gamma_5) \Psi_i Z_\mu \quad (1.39)$$

The vector( $g_V^i$ ) and axial-vector( $g_A^i$ ) couplings of the  $Z$  boson with fermions depends on charge  $Q$ , and the third component of weak-isospin  $I_3^f$ :

$$g_V^i \equiv (I_3^f - 2Q_f \sin^2 \theta_W) \quad (1.40)$$

$$g_A^i \equiv I_3^f \quad (1.41)$$

The electroweak radiative corrections to the couplings at the  $Z$ -pole up to all orders can be absorbed into complex form factors,  $R_f$  for the overall scale and  $K_f$  for the on-shell electroweak mixing angle, resulting in complex effective couplings:

$$\mathcal{G}_V^f = \sqrt{R_f} (I_3^f - 2Q_f K_f \sin^2 \theta_W) \quad (1.42)$$

$$\mathcal{G}_A^f = \sqrt{R_f} I_3^f \quad (1.43)$$

## 1. INTRODUCTION

---

In terms of the real parts of the complex form factors,

$$\rho_f \equiv \mathcal{R}(R_f) = 1 + \Delta\rho_{se} + \Delta\rho_f \quad (1.44)$$

$$k_f \equiv \mathcal{R}(k_f) = 1 + \Delta k_{se} + \Delta k_f \quad (1.45)$$

The effective electroweak mixing angle and the real effective couplings are defined as:

$$\sin^2 \theta_{eff}^f \equiv k_f \sin^2 \theta_W \quad (1.46)$$

$$g_V^f \equiv \sqrt{\rho_f}(I_3^f - 2Q_f \sin^2 \theta_{eff}^f) \quad (1.47)$$

$$g_A^f \equiv \sqrt{\rho_f} I_3^f \quad (1.48)$$

so that

$$\frac{g_V^f}{g_A^f} = \mathcal{R} \left( \frac{\mathcal{G}_V^f}{\mathcal{G}_A^f} \right) = 1 - 4 |Q_f| \sin^2 \theta_{eff}^f \quad (1.49)$$

The quantities  $\Delta\rho_{se}$  and  $\Delta k_{se}$  are universal corrections arising from the propagator self-energies, which have sensitivity to the Higgs field, while  $\Delta\rho_f$  and  $\Delta k_f$  are flavor-specific vertex corrections. The radiative corrections to the propagators and vertices are shown in Fig.1.1 and 1.2 (For vertices correction, just take LEP  $b$  channel as example).

### 1.2.1 Experimental results of $\sin^2 \theta_W^{eff}$

Precise determinations of  $\sin^2 \theta_{eff}^{lept}$  have been measured at various energy scale  $Q$ : atomic parity violation experiments [17] with  $Q$  below 0.01 GeV, the Moller scattering experiment using polarized electron beam scattering off unpolarized electrons in a liquid hydrogen target with an average  $Q$  of 0.16 GeV [18], the NuTeV experiment using deep inelastic scattering of neutrinos/anti-neutrinos from isoscalar target with

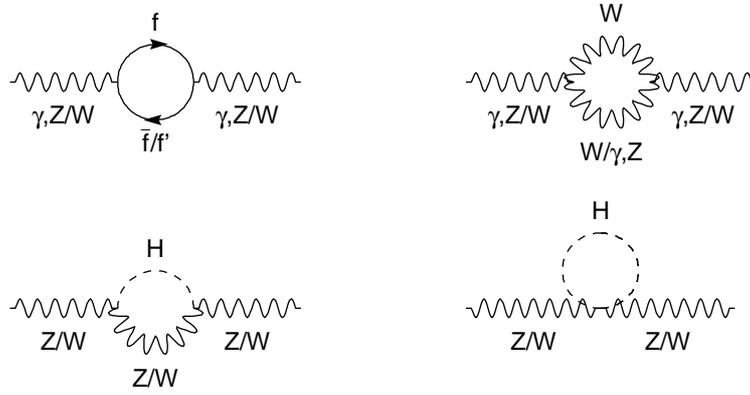


Figure 1.1: Higher-order corrections to the gauge boson propagators due to boson and fermion loops.

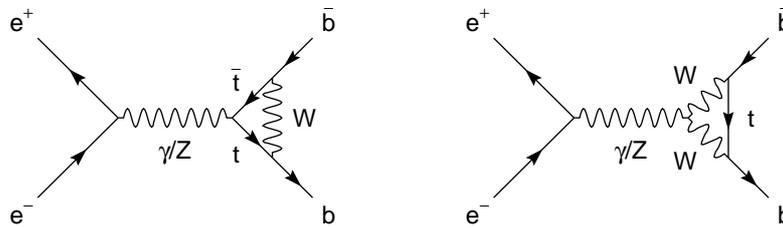


Figure 1.2: Vertex corrections to the process  $e^+e^- \rightarrow b\bar{b}$  at LEP.

## 1. INTRODUCTION

---

an average of  $Q$  of 2 GeV [22], the LEP experiments using unpolarized  $e^+/e^-$  beams and the SLD experiment using polarized beams to measure various asymmetries [21] with  $Q$  around  $Z$  resonance. The current world average value of  $\sin^2 \theta_{eff}^{lept}$  is dominated by the results from the LEP  $b$ -quark forward-backward asymmetry ( $A_{fb}^{0,b}$ ) and the SLD left-right asymmetry ( $A_l(SLD)$ ). The measured  $\sin^2 \theta_{eff}^{lept}$  values from these two most precise measurements diff by about three standard deviation.(the measurement from LEP of  $A_{FB}^{0,b}$  is  $2.4 \sigma$  from the fit [21],which is shown in Fig. 1.4.) The LEP experiments also measured the effective weak mixing angle in inclusive hadronic charge asymmetry  $Q_{fb}^{had}$ , dominated by significant systematic uncertainty due to the ambiguity of charge separation in light quark events. The Drell-Yan production of charged lepton pair at the Tevatron is the inverse process of the  $e^+e^- \rightarrow q\bar{q}$ ;contrasting to the large uncertainty of final state quark at LEP, the initial quark components at Tevatron are governed by well-understood parton distribution function (PDF), and therefore with sufficient statistics in Tevatron Run II, the data collected by the CDF and D0 collaborations could lead to a measurement of  $\sin^2 \theta_{eff}^{lept}$  with a precision comparable to that of the current world average. And the NuTeV measurement of  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  is  $2.9 \sigma$  from the fit [22].

Unfortunately in Run I, DØ does not have the magnet surround the tracking detector, so it is impossible to determine the charge of lepton, therefore cannot measure the forward-backward asymmetry. So in 2001, DØpublished a paper only with the differential cross section measurement, which is shown in Fig.1.5. And in RunII, with 2 T magnetic field and tracking detector, DØ experiment can measure this forward-backward charge asymmetry, we published the results using  $1.1 \text{ fb}^{-1}$  Run II data [28].

---

### 1.3 The Forward-Backward charge asymmetry

The  $A_{FB}$  results from all Tevatron experiments agree with the SM prediction pretty well, which is shown in Fig.1.6.

In addition, the invariant mass dependent  $A_{FB}$  measurement also provides direct probe of relative strengths of the vector and axial-vector couplings of  $u$  and  $d$  light quarks. At the LEP and SLD experiments, it is hard to distinguish between light flavor partons, and thus SM relations are assumed to extract  $Z$ -light parton coupling constants. While at the Tevatron, the dominant production processes are  $u\bar{u} \rightarrow ee$  and  $d\bar{d} \rightarrow ee$ , so we can have a direct probe of the  $Z$ -light quark couplings using  $Z \rightarrow ee$  events we collected. Similar preliminary results have been shown by H1 and ZEUS experiments, but with larger uncertainties, which is shown in Fig. 1.7. With  $5 \text{ fb}^{-1}$  of data, we expect to have the more precise measurement of  $Z$ -light quark couplings.

### 1.3 The Forward-Backward charge asymmetry

In Tevatron, the Drell-Yan process is  $q\bar{q} \rightarrow Z/\gamma^* \rightarrow e^+e^-$ , which is the reverse process of LEP hadronic productions, with more events in Tevatron than LEP, the  $\sin^2 \theta_W^{eff}$  can be measured more precisely. the lowest order via photon and  $Z$  boson exchange is shown in Fig. 1.8. Here the fermion  $q$  is a quark. The neutral current couplings of a fermion  $f$  to the  $Z$  boson has vector and axial-vector components:  $J^{Zf} \bar{f}(g_V^f + g_A^f \gamma_5)f$ , where  $g_V^f$  and  $g_A^f$  are vector and axial-vector couplings of the fermion to the  $Z$  respectively.

# 1. INTRODUCTION

---

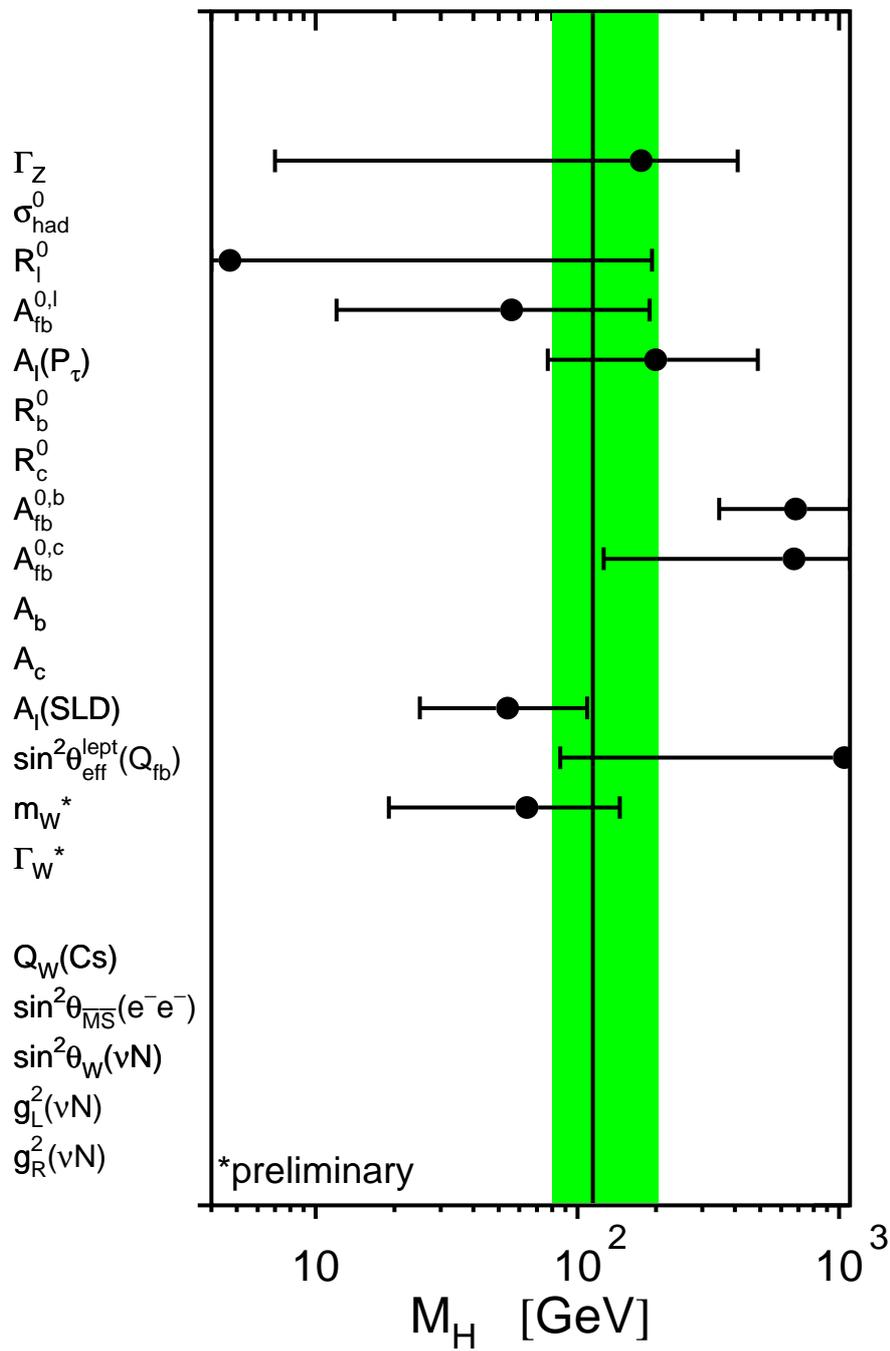


Figure 1.3: Constraints on the mass of the Higgs boson from each pseudo-observable. The Higgs-boson mass and its 68% CL uncertainty is obtained from a five-parameter SM fit to the observable..

### 1.3 The Forward-Backward charge asymmetry

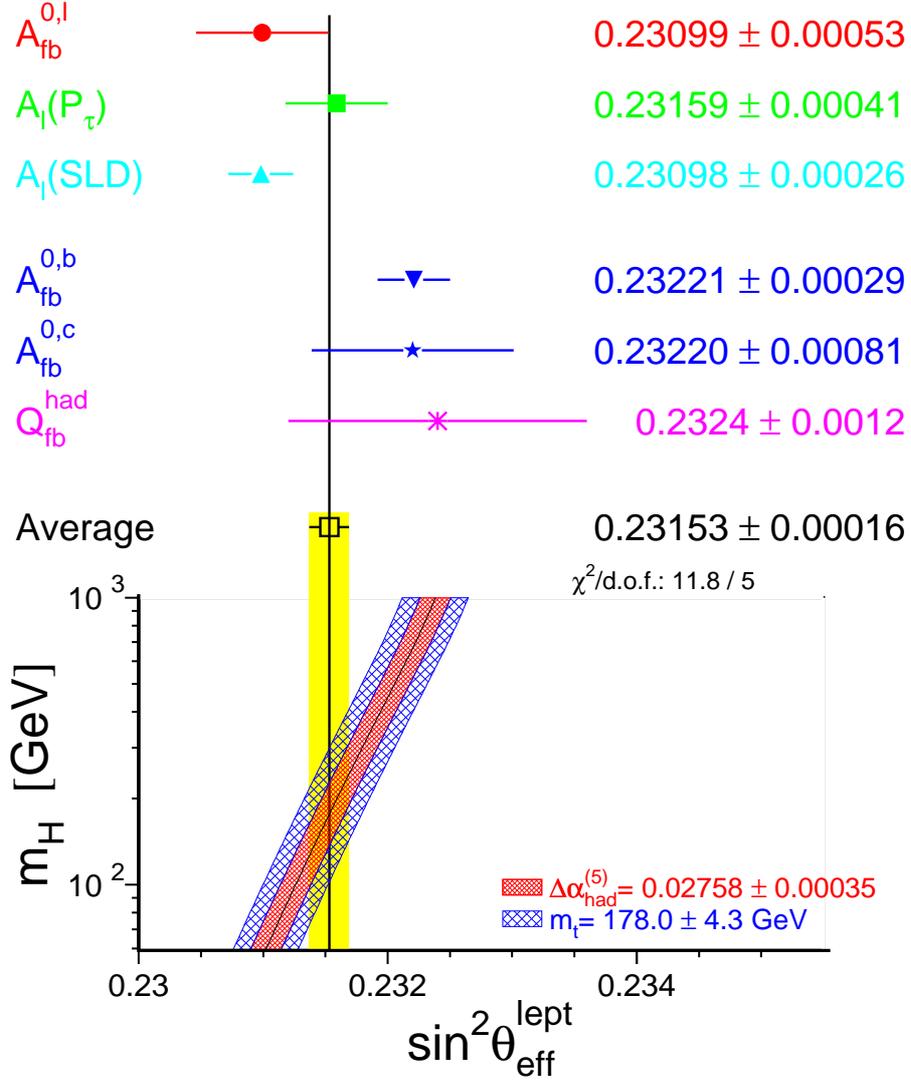


Figure 1.4: Comparison of the effective electroweak mixing angle  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  from LEP and SLC. Also shown is the SM prediction for  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  as a function of  $m_H$ . The additional uncertainty of the SM prediction is shown as the bands.

# 1. INTRODUCTION

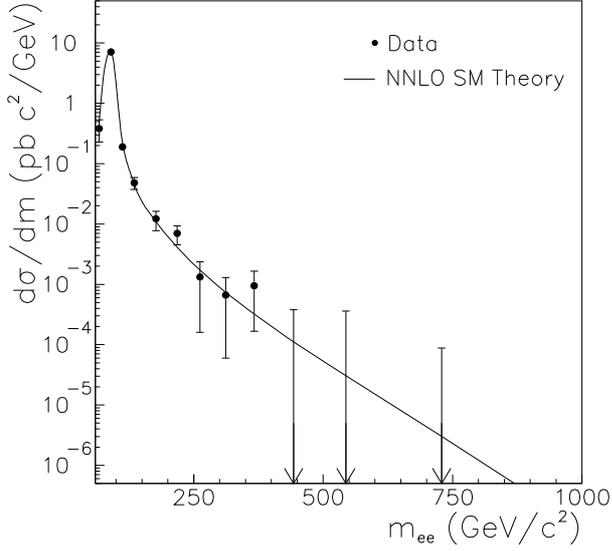


Figure 1.5: DØRunI published  $120 \text{ pb}^{-1} d\sigma/dM$  results.

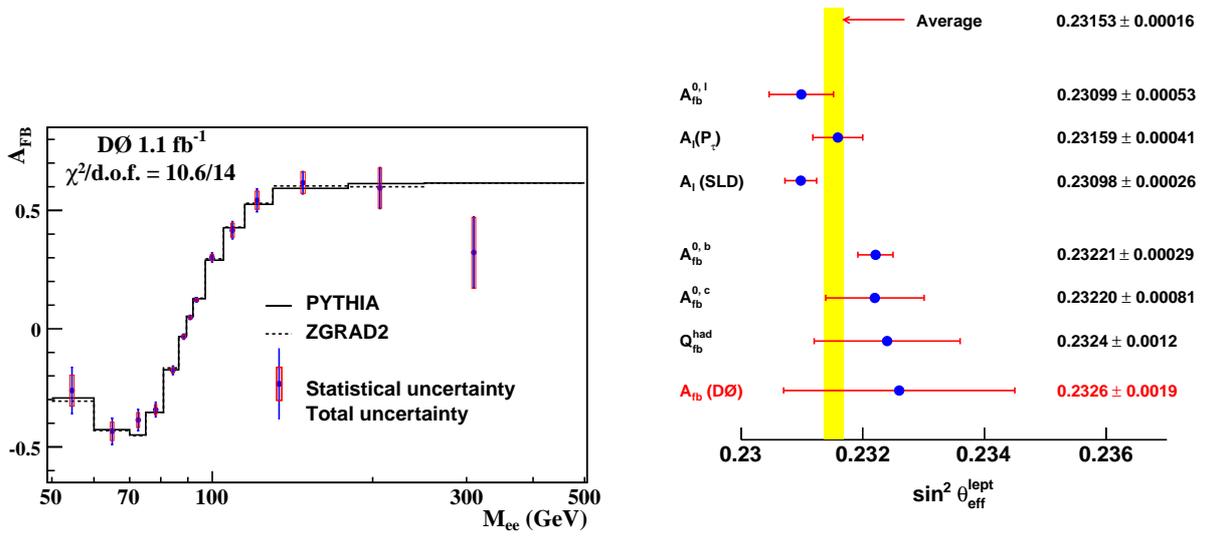


Figure 1.6: DØ RunII published  $1.1 \text{ fb}^{-1}$  results. The left plot is the  $A_{FB}$  results, and right one is measured  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  results.

### 1.3 The Forward-Backward charge asymmetry

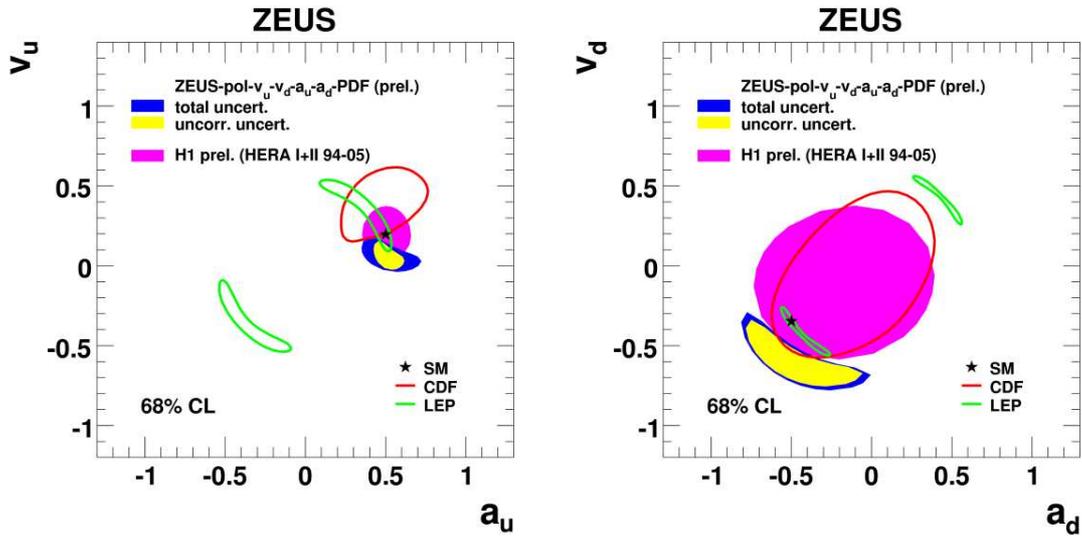


Figure 1.7:  $Z$  to  $u/d$  quark couplings from other experiments. The Red contour is CDF RunII[27] results, green contour is LEP[21] results, the pink region is results from H1 experiment, Blue and yellow region is results from ZEUS experiment.

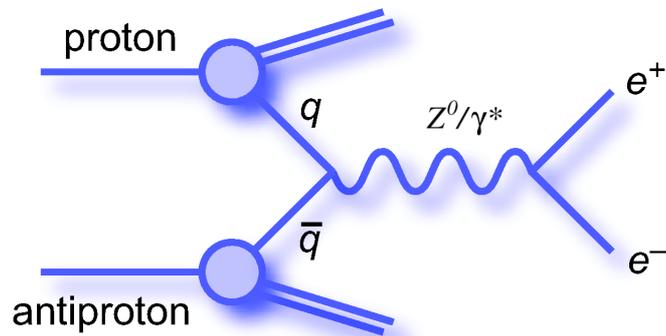


Figure 1.8: The lowest-order  $s$ -channel Feynman diagrams for  $f\bar{f} \rightarrow Z/\gamma^* \rightarrow e^+e^-$

## 1. INTRODUCTION

---

The differential cross section for fermion pair production around can be written as:

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{d\sigma(q\bar{q} \rightarrow e^+e^-)}{d\cos\theta} = C \frac{\pi\alpha^2}{2s} & \left[ Q_e^2 Q_q^2 (1 + \cos^2\theta) + Q_e Q_q \text{Re}(\chi(x)) (2g_V^q g_A^e (1 + \cos^2\theta) + 4g_A^q g_A^e \cos\theta) \right. \\ & \left. + |\chi(s)|^2 \left( (g_V^q)^2 + (g_A^q)^2 \right) (g_V^e)^2 + (g_A^e)^2 (1 + \cos^2\theta) + 8g_V^q g_A^q g_V^e g_A^e \cos\theta \right] \end{aligned} \quad (1.50)$$

where  $C$  is the color factor,  $\theta$  is the emission angle of the lepton (anti-lepton) relative to the quark(anti-quark) in the rest frame of the lepton pair, and

$$\chi(s) = \frac{1}{\cos^2\theta_W \sin^2\theta_W} \frac{s}{s - M_Z^2 + i\Gamma_Z M_Z} \quad (1.51)$$

The first and the third terms in Eq. 1.50 correspond to the pure  $\gamma^*$  and  $Z$  exchange respectively while the second term corresponds to the  $Z/\gamma^*$  interference. The angular dependence of the various term is either  $\cos\theta$  or  $(1 + \cos^2\theta)$ . The  $\cos\theta$  terms integrate to zero in the total cross section but induce the forward-backward asymmetry.

The differential cross section in Eq. 1.50 simplified into:

$$\frac{d\sigma}{d\cos\theta} = A(1 + \cos^2\theta) + B\cos\theta \quad (1.52)$$

where  $A$  and  $B$  are functions dependent on the weak isospin and charge of the incoming fermions and  $Q^2$  of the interaction. Events with  $\cos\theta > 0$  are called forward events, and events with  $\cos\theta < 0$  are called backward events. The integrated cross section for forward events is thus  $\sigma_F = \int_0^1 \frac{d\sigma}{d\cos\theta} d\cos\theta$  and the integrated cross section for backward events is  $\sigma_B = \int_{-1}^0 \frac{d\sigma}{d\cos\theta} d\cos\theta$ . The forward-backward charge asymmetry  $A_{FB}$  is defined as

$$\begin{aligned} A_{FB} &= \frac{\sigma_F - \sigma_B}{\sigma_F + \sigma_B} \\ &= \frac{\int_0^1 \frac{d\sigma}{d\cos\theta} d\cos\theta - \int_{-1}^0 \frac{d\sigma}{d\cos\theta} d\cos\theta}{\int_0^1 \frac{d\sigma}{d\cos\theta} d\cos\theta + \int_{-1}^0 \frac{d\sigma}{d\cos\theta} d\cos\theta} \end{aligned}$$

### 1.3 The Forward-Backward charge asymmetry

---

$$\begin{aligned}
 &= \frac{N_F - N_B}{N_F + N_B} \\
 &= \frac{3B}{8A}
 \end{aligned}
 \tag{1.53}$$

where  $N_F$  and  $N_B$  are numbers of forward and backward events. This asymmetry depends on the vector and axial-vector couplings of the quarks and leptons to the  $Z$  boson and is therefore sensitive to the effective weak mixing angle  $\sin^2 \bar{\theta}_W$ . At the Tevatron,  $A_{FB}$  is measured as a function of the invariant mass of the di-lepton pair. The largest asymmetries occur at parton center-of-mass energies of around 70 GeV and above 120 GeV. At the  $Z$ -pole, the asymmetry is dominated by the couplings of the  $Z$  boson and arises from the interference of the vector and axial components of its coupling. At large invariant mass, the asymmetry is dominated by  $Z/\gamma^*$  interference and is almost constant.

When the incoming quarks participating in the Drell-Yan process have no transverse momentum relative to their parent baryons,  $\theta$  is determined unambiguously from the four-momenta of the leptons by calculating the angle that the lepton makes with the proton beam in the center-of-mass frame of the electron pair. When either of the incoming quarks has significant transverse momentum, however, there exists an ambiguity in the four-momenta of the incoming quarks in the frame of the di-lepton pair, since one can not determine the four-momenta of the quark and anti-quark individually. The Collins-Soper formalism[19] is adopted to minimize the effects of the transverse momentum of the incoming quarks. In this formalism, the polar axis is defined as the bisector of the proton beam momentum and the negative of the anti-proton beam momentum when they are boosted into the center-of-mass frame of the di-lepton pair, which is shown in Fig. 1.9. The variable  $\theta^*$  is defined as the angle between the lepton

## 1. INTRODUCTION

---

and the polar axis. Let  $Q$  ( $Q_T$ ) be the four momentum (transverse momentum) of the di-lepton pair,  $P_1$  and  $P_2$  be the four-momentum of the lepton and anti-lepton respectively, all measured in the lab frame. Then  $\cos \theta^*$  is given by

$$\cos \theta^* = \frac{2}{Q\sqrt{Q^2 + Q_T^2}}(P_1^+ P_2^- - P_1^- P_2^+) \quad (1.54)$$

where  $P_i^\pm = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}(P_i^0 \pm P_i^3)$ , and  $P^0$  and  $P^3$  represent energy and the longitudinal component of the momentum.

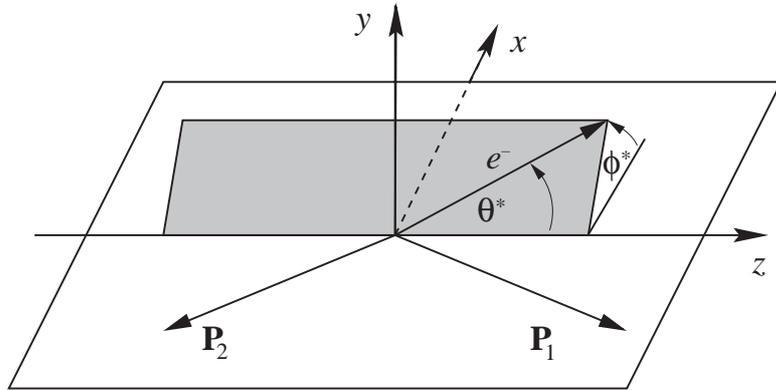


Figure 1.9: The Collins-Soper reference frame.

Fig. 1.10 shows the  $\cos \theta^*$  distribution and the di-lepton invariant mass distribution for forward and backward events using  $Z/\gamma^* \rightarrow ee$  events generated with PYTHIA [55] generator with  $Z/\gamma^*$  mass between 50 and 600 GeV. Fig. 1.11 shows the  $A_{FB}$  as a function of the di-lepton invariant mass distribution using PYTHIA.

The standard model (SM) tree level prediction for  $A_{FB}$  as a function of  $\hat{s}$  for  $q\bar{q} \rightarrow Z/\gamma^* \rightarrow e^+e^-$  is shown in Fig. 1.12 for  $u$  and  $d$  quarks.

### 1.3 The Forward-Backward charge asymmetry

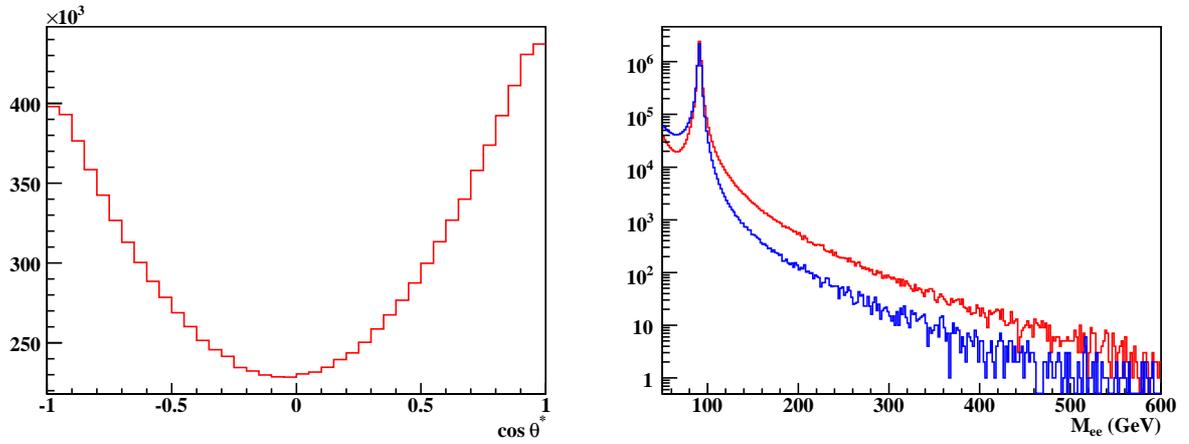


Figure 1.10:  $\cos \theta^*$  and di-electron invariant mass distribution (Red for forward events and Blue for backward events) for  $Z/\gamma^* \rightarrow ee$  events generated with PYTHIA.

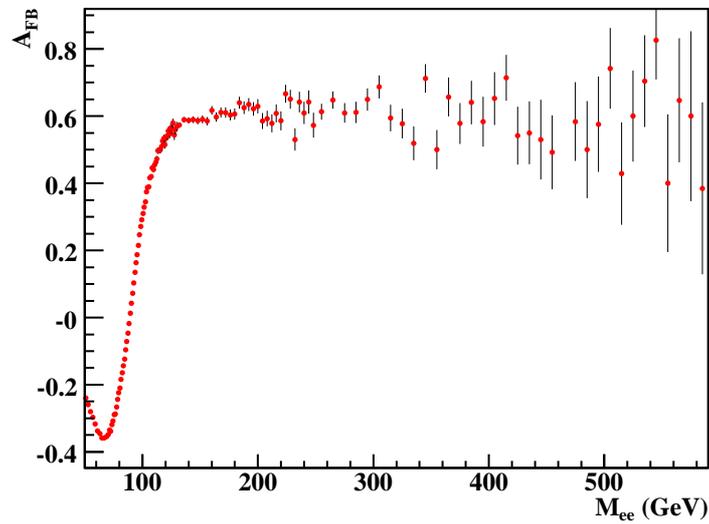


Figure 1.11:  $A_{FB}$  as a function of the di-lepton invariant mass for  $Z/\gamma^* \rightarrow ee$  events generated with PYTHIA.

## 1. INTRODUCTION

---

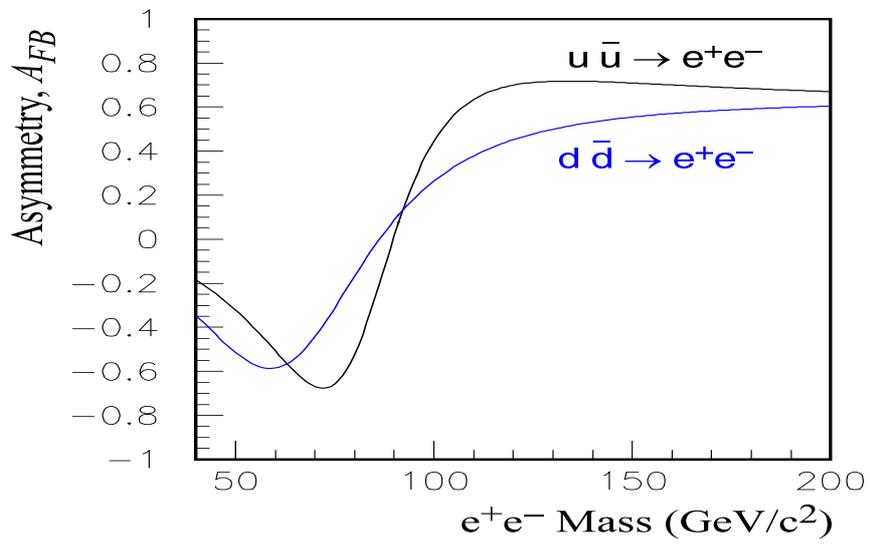


Figure 1.12: The standard model tree level prediction of the forward-backward asymmetry as a function of  $e^+e^-$  invariant mass for  $u\bar{u} \rightarrow e^+e^-$  and  $d\bar{d} \rightarrow e^+e^-$ .[\[20\]](#)

# Chapter 2

## Experimental Apparatus

### 2.1 The Accelerator

The Fermi National Accelerator Laboratory is currently the site of the world's highest center-of-mass energy proton-antiproton colliding beam accelerator, the Tevatron. It consists of several stages that increase the energy of the protons and antiprotons. Figure 2.1 shows the layout of the accelerator system. A detailed description of the Tevatron can be found at [29].

The acceleration process begins with the Pre-accelerator, or “PreAcc”; it is the source of the negatively charged hydrogen ions accelerated by the linear accelerator. It first converts hydrogen gas to ionized hydrogen gas ( $H^-$ ). Next, an extractor plate accelerates the ions to a kinetic energy of 18 keV, and a Cockcroft-Walton accelerator propels the ions to an energy of 750 keV. The ions are then injected into a linear accelerator (the Linac), where they are accelerated to an energy of 400 MeV. When the ions enter the Booster, a circular synchrotron nearly half a kilometer in circumference,

## 2. EXPERIMENTAL APPARATUS

---

they are passed through a thin carbon foil which strips off the electrons, leaving a beam of  $H^+$  ions, which are bare protons. The steady beam of protons travels around the Booster, collecting more protons with each turn. After six revolutions, the Booster contains about  $3 \times 10^{12}$  protons, and the Linac ceases supplying them. The Booster then restores the bunch structure to the beam and accelerates the protons to 8 GeV.

After the Booster, the protons are injected into a larger synchrotron, the Main Injector. The Main Injector is about two miles in circumference, and replaces the Main Ring that was used in Run I of the Tevatron. With the Main Injector there is a factor of three increase in the number of protons that can be delivered to the Tevatron over what was possible in Run I. The Main Injector provides a 120 GeV proton beam for the production of antiprotons, and it also accelerates protons and antiprotons from an energy of 8 GeV to an energy of 150 GeV and then injects them into the Tevatron. The extracted 120 GeV protons are directed onto a nickel target to produce antiprotons. For every about  $10^5$  incident protons, one antiproton is produced. The antiprotons are produced with a wide range of momenta. They are focused and stored in the Debuncher and Accumulator rings, where the beams are cooled, creating a beam of 8 GeV antiprotons to be injected into the Main Injector, and accelerated to 150 GeV. The 150 GeV antiprotons are then injected into the Tevatron in the direction opposite to the proton beam.

The Tevatron is a 4-mile circumference synchrotron ring where the beams are accelerated to 980 GeV. It contains near 1,000 superconducting magnets which operate at a temperature of 4.6 Kelvin and provide a field of 4.2 Tesla. Once protons and antiprotons are accelerated to 980 GeV, low-beta quadrupole magnets squeeze the beams

## 2.1 The Accelerator

to small transverse dimensions. The beams are then brought into collision at two interaction points:  $B\bar{O}$ , where the CDF detector was built and  $D\bar{O}$ , the location of the other multipurpose detector, also called  $D\bar{O}$  since it was named after its interaction point.

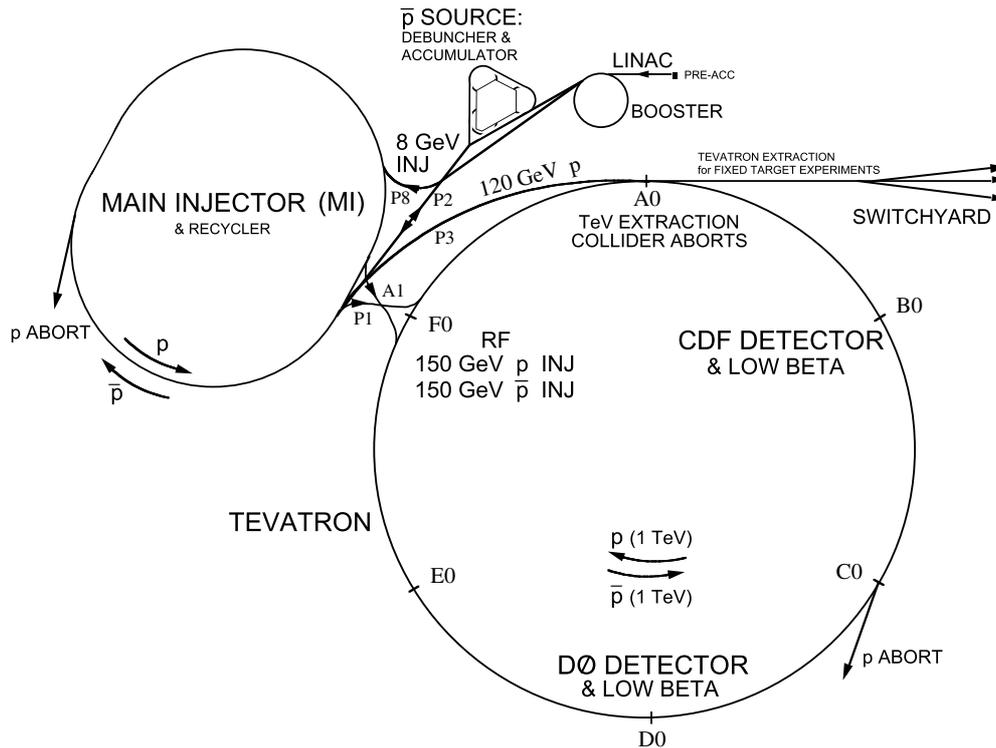


Figure 2.1: The general layout of the collider facility at Fermilab.

The bunch structure for Run I and Run II is shown in Fig. 2.2. In Run I, the accelerator delivered 6 bunches of protons and antiprotons (“ $6 \times 6$ ” bunches), separated by a  $3.5 \mu\text{s}$  gap. This gap was used to form the trigger and sample the detector baselines prior to the next crossing. In Run II, the proton antiproton bunches circulate in superbunches of  $4.36 \mu\text{s}$  duration, with a  $2.64 \mu\text{s}$  gap spacing between them. The spacing between each bunch is  $396 \text{ ns}$  (“ $36 \times 36$ ” bunches).

## 2. EXPERIMENTAL APPARATUS

---

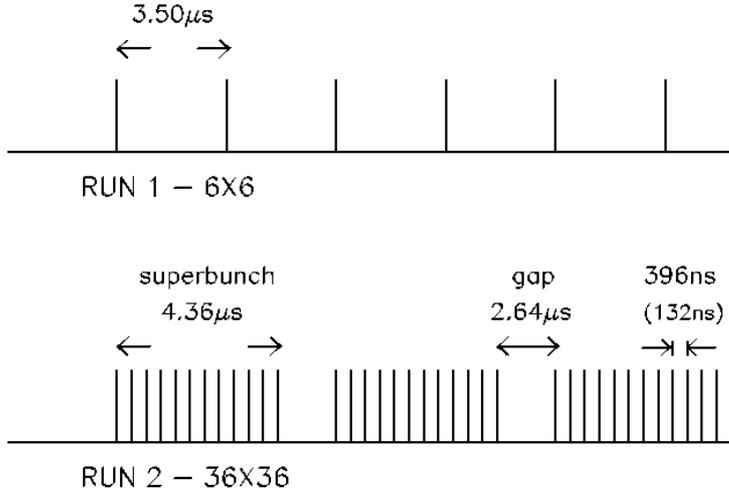


Figure 2.2: Tevatron bunch scheme for Run I (top) and Run II (bottom).

### 2.2 $D\emptyset$ Detector

The  $D\emptyset$  detector is a multipurpose particle detector designed for the study of high mass and large transverse energy phenomena. Initial operation started in 1992 with Run I of the Tevatron accelerator; it has played a key role in experimental high energy physics [30]. One example of this was the discovery of the top quark in 1995 with the CDF detector [31].

Since the Tevatron accelerator complex has been upgraded, the instantaneous luminosity was increased from  $10^{31}\text{ cm}^{-2}\text{s}^{-1}$  in Run I to  $10^{32}\text{ cm}^{-2}\text{s}^{-1}$  in Run II. Also the Tevatron beam energy was increased from 900 GeV to 980 GeV, increasing the  $p\bar{p}$  center-of-mass collisions from 1.8 TeV to 1.96 TeV.

To take advantage of these improvements, the  $D\emptyset$  detector went through a major upgrade. The upgraded  $D\emptyset$  detector consists of three major subsystems: a tracking system with superconducting solenoid magnet, a nearly  $4\pi$  solid angle uranium liq-

uid argon calorimeter with two additional preshower detectors, and a muon toroidal spectrometer. Figure 2.3 shows an overview of the entire DØ detector [32].

### 2.2.1 The DØ Coordinate System

The following convention for coordinates is used: the direction of the protons is the positive  $z$  direction, the positive  $x$  direction points away from the center of the Tevatron ring and thus the positive  $y$  direction points up.

In  $p\bar{p}$  collisions, one can use the image that two “bags” of elementary particles (quarks, antiquarks and gluons) collide. One is usually interested in events where two of these elementary particles undergo a so-called “hard-scattering” interaction; their annihilation produces new particles at high transverse momentum. The center-of-mass system (CMS) of this hard interaction usually has a boost along the  $z$ -axis. Many of the particles produced in the collision, for example the remnants of the proton not participating in the hard-scattering interaction, escape down the beam pipe. Hence the longitudinal boost of the CMS of the hard scattering partons cannot be measured. The transverse momentum of the particles that escape down the beam pipe is negligible compared to the detector resolution, making it possible to apply conservation of energy and momentum in the transverse plane. This makes the transverse energy/momentum and the missing transverse energy ( $\cancel{E}_T$ ), defined as the transverse energy imbalance, extensively used in hadron collider physics. The rapidity  $y$  of a particle (defined as  $y = \frac{1}{2} \ln \left( \frac{E+p_z}{E-p_z} \right)$ ) is also generally used. The advantage of using rapidity is that it is invariant under the Lorentz transformation. If the energy of a particle is much larger than its mass ( $m/E \rightarrow 0$ ), the pseudorapidity  $\eta = -\log \tan(\theta/2)$  becomes a very good

## 2. EXPERIMENTAL APPARATUS

---

approximation to  $y$  (where  $\theta$  is the polar angle with respect to the proton beam).

### 2.2.2 Tracking System

One of the biggest changes to the DØ detector between Run I and Run II was the addition of a new tracking system inside the calorimeter's bore. Figure 2.4 shows the various components of the inner tracking detectors in DØ. The inner detectors are surrounded by a 2 Tesla superconducting solenoid magnet, which bends the paths of charged particles with a curvature inversely proportional to their transverse momenta. Observing the curvature of a particle's path allows for a precise measurement of its momentum, as well as the sign of the particle's charge.

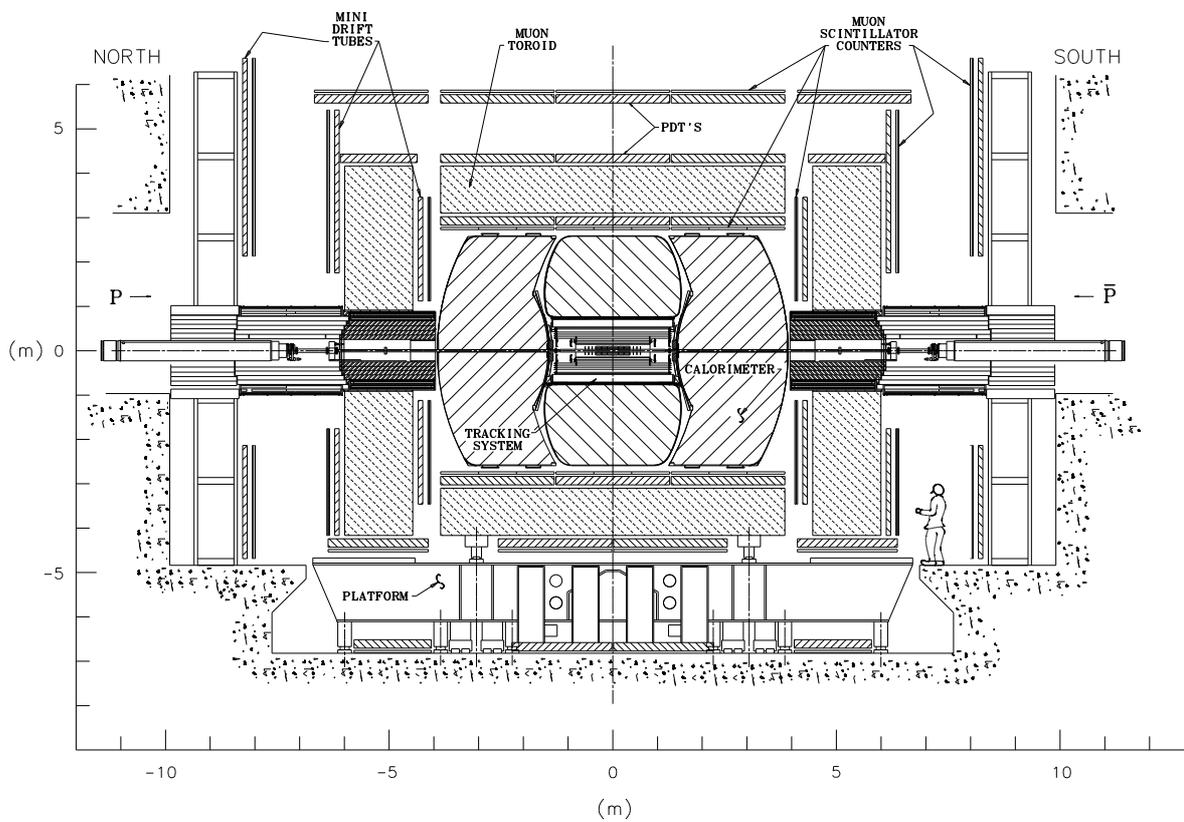
#### The Silicon Microstrip Tracker

The detector nearest to the interaction region is the Silicon Microstrip Tracker (SMT), which provides the high resolution position measurements of the charged particle paths that are used to reconstruct tracks and determine the vertex information [33]. Figure 2.5 shows an overview of the SMT detector. It consists of six 12 cm long barrels, with interspersed disks (12 F-disks and 4 H-disks), and has approximately 793,000 readout channels with a  $r\phi$  hit resolution of approximately 10  $\mu\text{m}$ . The tracks for high  $\eta$  particles are reconstructed in three dimensions primarily by the disks, while particles at small  $\eta$  are detected primarily by the barrels.

#### The Central Fiber Tracker

Surrounding the silicon detector and extending out to the solenoid magnet, is the Central Fiber Tracker (CFT), a detector which aids the SMT in reconstruction of charged particle tracks [34]. It makes use of 76,800 scintillating fibers and can detect

## 2.2 DØ Detector



900764  
2/9/00

Figure 2.3: A view of the DØ Run II upgraded detector.

## 2. EXPERIMENTAL APPARATUS

---

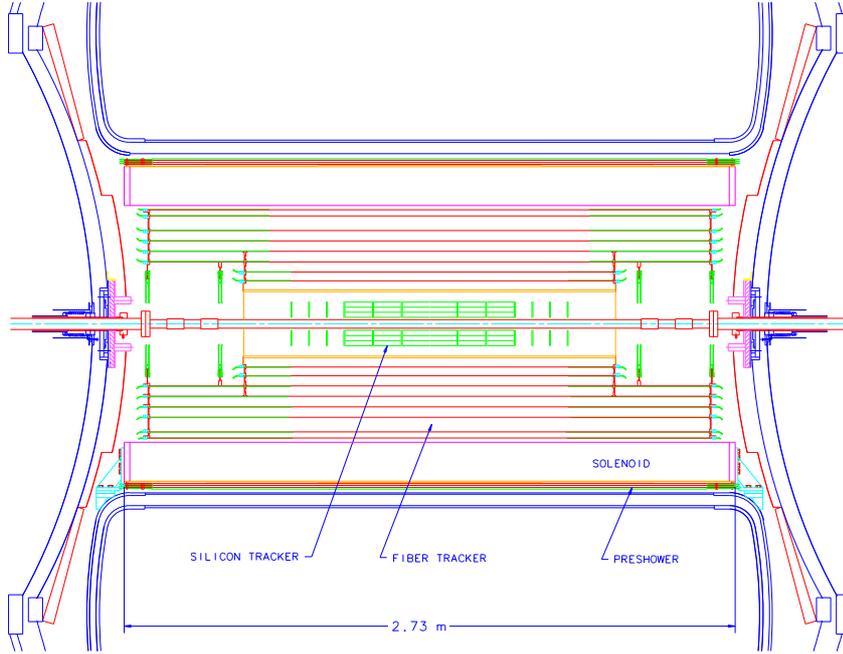


Figure 2.4: Cross-sectional view of the DØ tracking volume.

charged particles up to  $|\eta|$  of about 2. Each ionizing particle produces an average of about 10 photons in each fiber, which are then detected using a Visible Light Photon Counter (VLPC) that converts the photons into an electrical pulse.

There are 8 super-layers; each super-layer is completely covered by two doublet layers of scintillating fibers. The innermost doublet layer is mounted along the axial direction to provide the  $\phi$  information (called the  $x$  layer), and a stereo doublet-layer is on the top to provide the  $\eta$  (called the  $u/v$  layer, the  $u$  layer tilts 3 degree from the  $z$  axis clockwise and the  $v$  layer tilts 3 degree counter-clockwise). Since each fiber is 835 microns in diameter, the position resolution is on the order of  $100 \mu\text{m}$ , corresponding to a  $\phi$  resolution of  $2 \times 10^{-4}$  radians. Figure 2.6 shows a view of the CFT as well as an illustration of the doublet layer configuration.

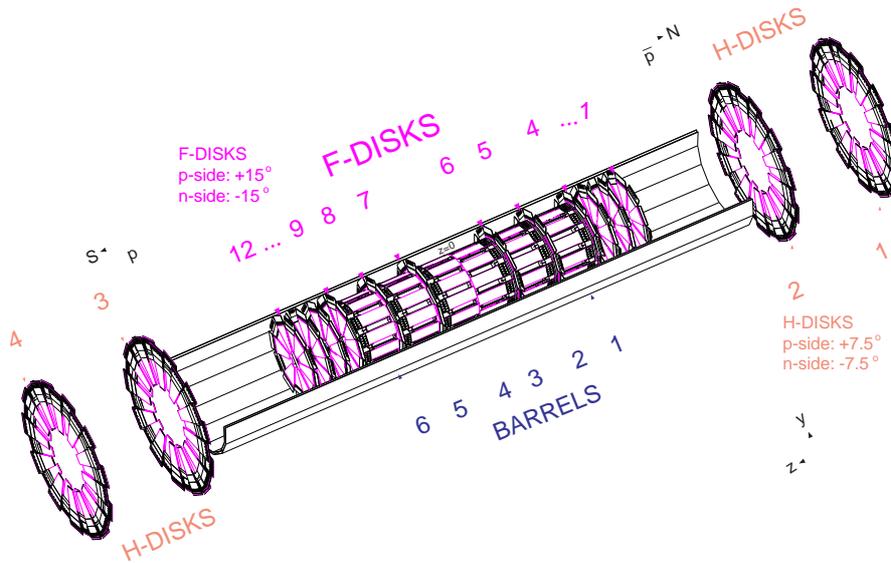


Figure 2.5: DØ Run II Silicon Microstrip Tracker detector.

### 2.2.3 Preshower Detectors

There are two preshower detectors located just before the calorimeters: a central preshower covering  $|\eta| < 1.3$  (CPS), and a forward preshower covering  $1.5 < |\eta| < 2.5$  (FPS) (shown in Fig. 2.7 and Fig. 2.8). The primary purpose of the preshower detectors is to provide discrimination between electrons/photons and hadronic jets by exploiting the differences between their energy loss mechanisms in showers.

The detectors function as a calorimeter by providing an early energy sampling and as a tracker by providing precise position measurements. The central system [35] consists of a lead radiator of two radiation lengths thickness at  $\eta = 0$ , followed by three layers of scintillating material arranged in an axial,  $u - v$  geometry with a  $22.5^\circ$  stereo angle. The forward system [36] also consists of a lead radiator with a thickness of two radiation lengths, sandwiched between two layers of scintillating material. Each layer is made from two thinner layers of scintillating fibers, arranged in a  $u - v$  geometry

## 2. EXPERIMENTAL APPARATUS

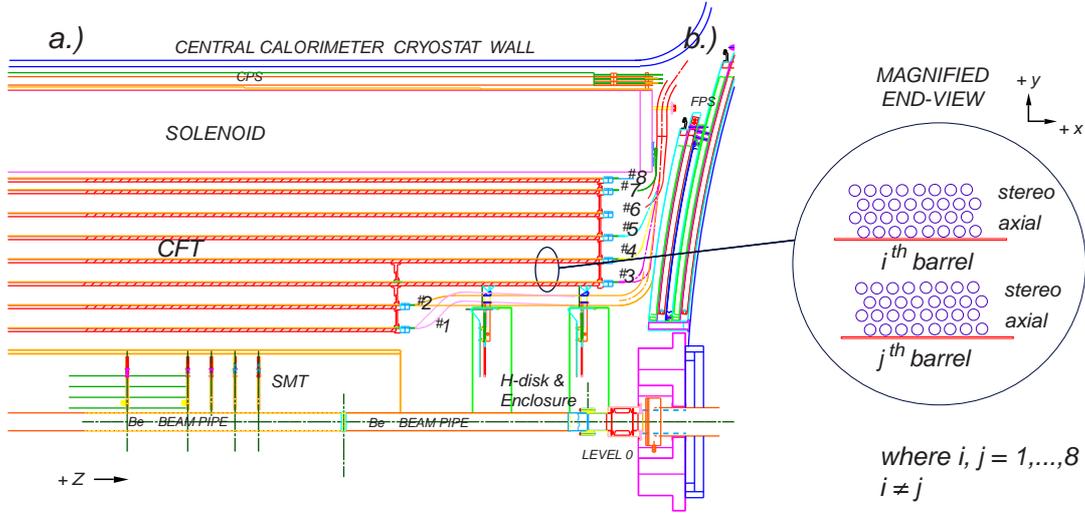


Figure 2.6: (a) A quarter  $r - z$  view of the CFT detector showing the nested eight barrel design. (b) A magnified  $r - \phi$  end view of the two doublet layer configuration for two different barrels.

with a  $22.5^\circ$  stereo angle. Electrons are recognized based on the fact that muons and charged pions traversing the radiator will only deposit energy due to ionization, while electromagnetic particles will shower in the radiator.

### 2.2.4 Calorimeters

The  $D\phi$  calorimeters have been designed to provide excellent measurement of the energy of photons, electrons and hadronic jets, by inducing them to create showers of energy using a large amounts of dense material. The energy in the showers is then sampled at many points, to determine its shape and energy. In this section, I first describe the energy measurement in the calorimeter, then describe the calorimeter and its performance.

#### Energy Measurement

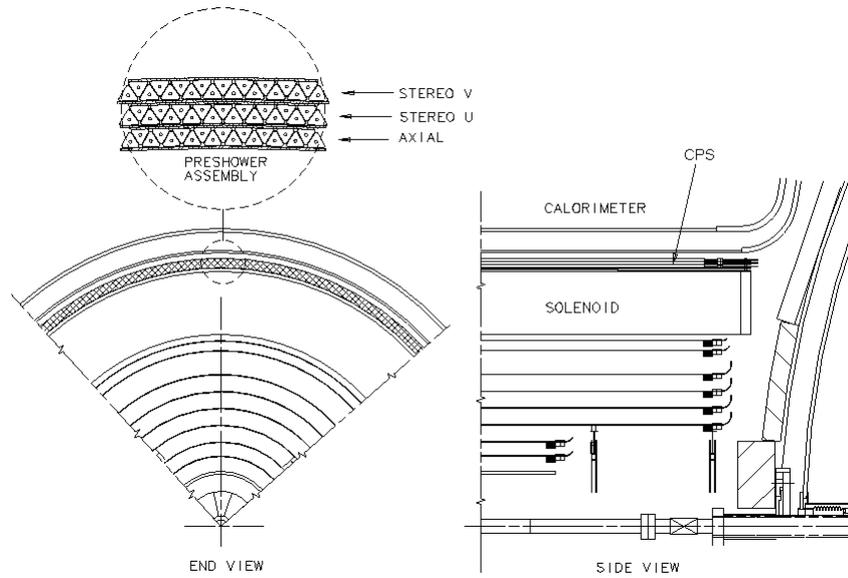


Figure 2.7: Cross-sectional end view (left) and side view (right) of the Central Preshower Detector.

EM objects interact primarily with materials via the following two processes: pair production ( $\gamma \rightarrow e^+e^-$ ) and bremsstrahlung ( $e \rightarrow e\gamma$ ). For each successive interaction the number of secondary particles increases while the average energy per particle decreases. It is the collection and measurement of these secondary particles that gives us information on the original EM object's energy. Because of these interactions, the energy of the original particle is expected to drop exponentially:

$$E(x) = E_0 e^{-x/X_0} \quad (2.1)$$

where  $E_0$  is the particle's original energy,  $x$  is the distance traveled, and  $X_0$  is the radiation length of the material being passed through. For uranium,  $X_0$  is approximately 3.2 mm.

For hadrons the interaction with material occurs with the nuclei via the strong

## 2. EXPERIMENTAL APPARATUS

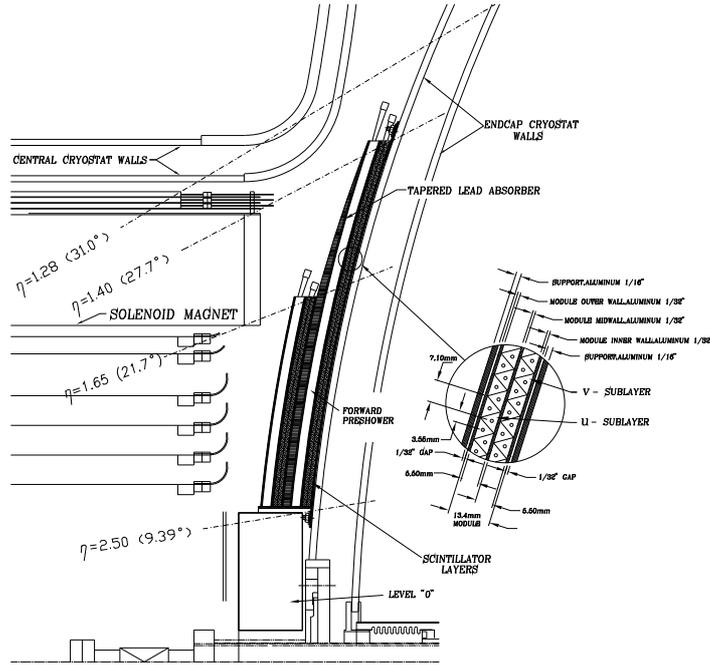


Figure 2.8: One quarter view of the Forward Preshower Detector.

nuclear force. These interactions also produce secondary particles, most of them are neutral pions ( $\pi^0$ ) and charged pions ( $\pi^\pm$ ). While the  $\pi^0$ s produce electrons and photons which interact electromagnetically, the charged pions interact strongly. This type of particle shower tends to develop over longer distances and is also larger. The analog of the radiation length for hadronic interactions is the nuclear interaction length ( $\lambda_0$ ), which is about 10.5 cm for uranium.

### DØ Calorimeters

Figure 2.9 shows an overview of the DØ calorimeter system [37]. The DØ calorimeters are compensating sampling calorimeters, using liquid argon as an active medium and depleted uranium as well as copper and steel as absorber material. The choice of this configuration was driven by its ease of segmentation, compensation properties, stability of calibration, and homogeneity of response. The high density of uranium

allows a compact detector that contains almost all shower energy while reducing cost. There are three liquid argon calorimeters housed in three separate cryostats - one central (CC) (with  $|\eta| < 1.1$ ) and two endcaps (EC) (with  $1.5 < |\eta| < 4.2$ ). In the inter-cryostat region ( $1.1 < |\eta| < 1.4$ ), both "massless gaps" and an inter-cryostat detector (ICD) have been added to sample the shower energy that is lost by particles that transverse the module endplates and cryostat walls.

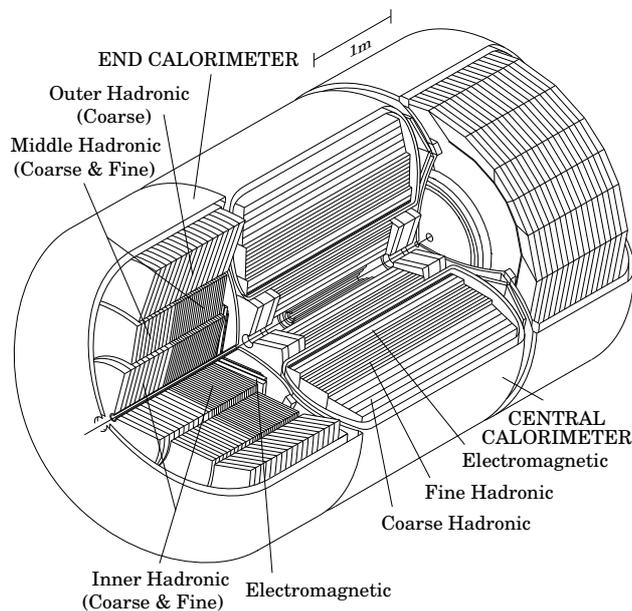


Figure 2.9: Overall view of the calorimeter system.

A typical calorimeter unit cell is shown in Fig. 2.12; it is made up of an alternating sandwich of signal boards and absorber material separated by a 2.3 mm liquid argon gap. The electric field is established by grounding the metal absorber plate and connecting the resistive surfaces of the signal boards to a positive high voltage (2.0 kV). Particles interact with the uranium and the liquid argon, thus producing charged particles in the liquid argon. These charged particles will then move in the electric field and be collected. The electron drift time across the argon gap is  $\sim 450$  ns, which sets

## 2. EXPERIMENTAL APPARATUS

---

the time scale for the signal charge collection. The gap thickness was chosen to be large enough to observe minimum ionizing particle (MIP) signals and to avoid fabrication difficulties.

The pattern and sizes of the readout cells were determined from several considerations. The transverse sizes of the cells were chosen to be comparable to the transverse sizes of showers:  $\Delta R \sim 0.2$  for EM showers and  $\Delta R \sim 0.5$  for hadronic showers (where  $\Delta R = \sqrt{\Delta\eta^2 + \Delta\phi^2}$ ). Segmentation finer than this is useful in measuring the shape of electrons and jets. Longitudinal subdivision within the EM, fine hadronic and coarse hadronic sections is also useful since the longitudinal shower profiles help distinguish EM objects and hadron jets.

The final arrangement of the readout cells was chosen to give semi-projective readout towers of equal size in pseudorapidity that are subdivided in depth. The cells are first ganged into layers, and then arranged into semi-projective towers of size  $0.1 \times 0.1$  in  $\Delta\eta \times \Delta\phi$  and are segmented longitudinally into electromagnetic (EM), fine hadronic (FH), and coarse hadronic (CH) sections. A cross sectional view of one quarter of the detector, showing the  $\eta$  and depth segmentation is shown in Fig. 2.10. Each projective tower consists of 8 to 12 layers. To capture the profile of electromagnetic showers, the third layer of the EM section, which corresponds to the shower maximum, is segmented more finely transversely into  $0.05 \times 0.05$  in  $\Delta\eta \times \Delta\phi$  (See Fig. 2.11).

Different absorber plate materials were used in different locations. The EM modules for both CC and EC used nearly pure depleted uranium; the thicknesses were 3 mm and 4 mm respectively. The fine hadronic module sections have 6 mm thick uranium-niobium (2%) alloy. The coarse hadronic module sections contain relatively

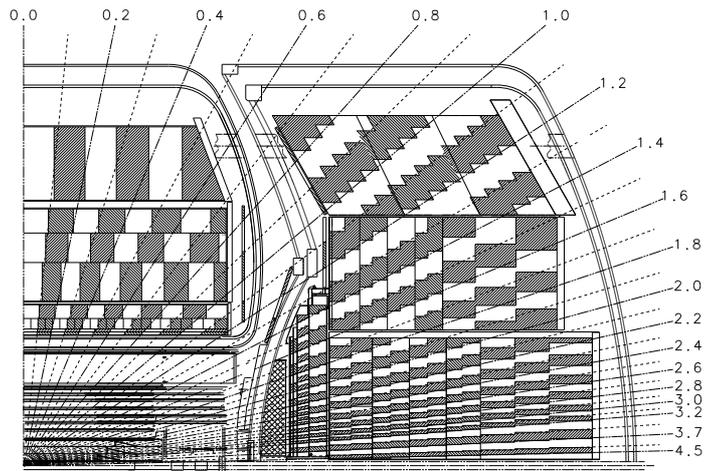


Figure 2.10: Side-view of one quarter of the DØ calorimeter system, showing segmentation and tower definitions. The line extending from the center of the detector denote the pseudorapidity coverage of cells and projected towers.

thick (46.5 mm) plates of either copper (CC) or stainless steel (EC). For the CC, the EM section consists of 32 modules, each subtending  $2\pi/32 \approx 0.2$  radians in azimuth.

Table 2.1 and 2.2 list the major parameters for the central and endcap calorimeters. At  $\eta = 0$ , the CC has a total of 7.2 nuclear absorption lengths; at the smallest angle of the EC, the total is 10.3 nuclear absorption lengths.

### Calorimeter Electronics

In Run II, the higher instantaneous luminosity of the Tevatron collider with the shorter bunch crossing interval of 132 ns (compared to the Run I bunch crossing interval of 3.5  $\mu$ s) forces a faster readout time. At the same time, a low-noise performance and minimal channel-to-channel variations must be maintained, to prevent any degradation to the calorimeter's performance [38] [39]. A schematic of the electronics system is shown in Fig. 2.13.

## 2. EXPERIMENTAL APPARATUS

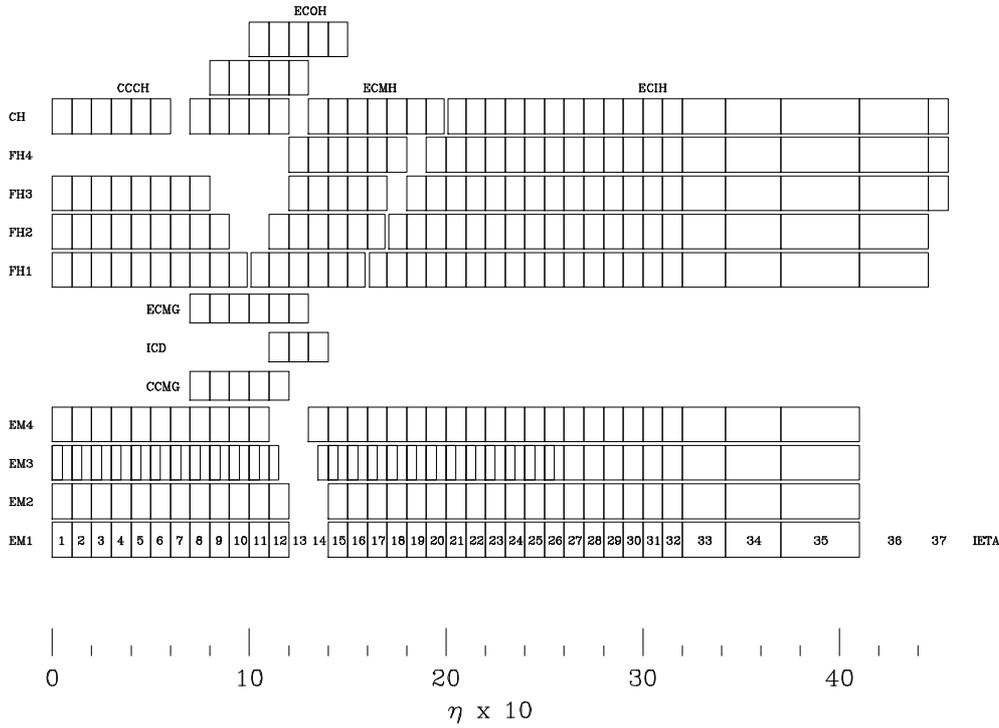


Figure 2.11: Calorimeter channel configuration in terms of depth and  $\eta$ .

The signal from each calorimeter readout cell is triangular with a very fast rise time and a decay time of 400 ns. Each signal is taken to a feedthrough port via 30  $\Omega$  resistive coaxial cables. The impedance-matched cabling maintains a low-noise transfer of the signal to the preamplifiers. The integrated circuits in the preamplifiers convert the charge to a voltage that is proportional to the input charge. In order to minimize electronic noise stemming from the shorter shaping times, the preamps incorporate a dual field effect transistor (FET) input design. The output signal from the preamplifier is approximately a step function with an about 400 ns rise time and a long fall time ( $\sim 15 \mu\text{s}$ ). As the values of the calorimeter cell capacitances range over a broad interval, 14 species of preamplifiers were built to match them. The preamplifier output signal is then shaped into a shorter one with a 320 ns rise time and a 500 ns decay time.

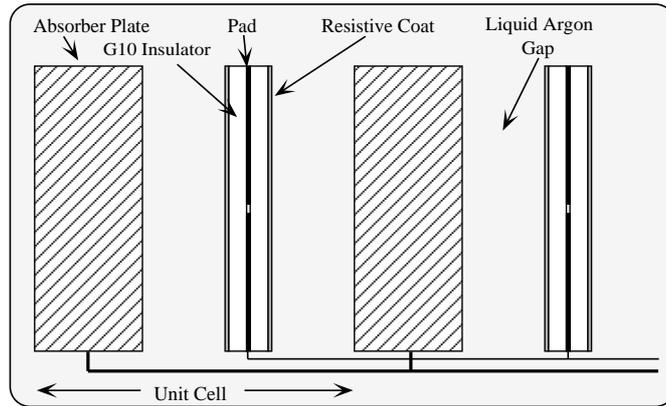


Figure 2.12: Schematic view of a representative calorimeter unit cell. The gap structure, grounded absorber plates, and signal boards are shown.

The shaped signals are sampled every 132 ns; the timing is tuned such that the shaped output can be sampled at its peak at about 320 ns. Because of this earlier sampling time compared to the liquid argon drift time of 430 ns, only  $2/3^{rd}$ s of the charge in the cell is used to form the preamplifier signal. Figure 2.14 shows the shape of signals from the calorimeter cell, the preamplifier and the shaper.

The signal is then split and sent to two paths. In one path it is amplified by a factor of  $8g$  ( $g \approx 1$ ) with respect to the other. The gain factor is defined by precision resistors. We will call the 2 paths  $G = 8$  and  $G = 1$  respectively. On each path the signal is sampled every 132 ns, and the measured voltage is stored in an analog memory called the Switched Capacitor Array (L1 SCA). On a trigger, a gain selector decides which of the 2 signals ( $G = 1$  or  $G = 8$ ) is most appropriate: the  $G = 8$  one if the signal is below a certain saturation voltage, the  $G = 1$  otherwise. The reason two paths are used is that the Analog-to-Digital Converters (ADCs) only have a 12-bit dynamic range, while a 15-bit range is needed. The SCA is a 48-element-deep storage

## 2. EXPERIMENTAL APPARATUS

---

	EM	FH	CH
Number of Modules	32	16	16
Absorber	Uranium	Uranium	Copper
Absorber Thickness (mm)	3	6	46.5
Argon Gap (mm)	2.3	2.3	2.3
Number of Readout Layers	4	3	1
Cells per Readout Layer	2, 2, 7, 10	20, 16, 14	9
Total Radiation Length ( $X_0$ )	20.5	96.0	32.9
Total Interaction Length ( $\lambda$ )	0.76	3.2	3.2

Table 2.1: Central Calorimeter Module Parameters.

device that provides a buffer zone for saving analog information from a calorimeter channel until it can be processed through the ADC's after an event has occurred and a trigger has been received. The sample at the nominal peak time and the one earlier by  $3 \times 132$  ns are then retrieved from the SCA memory and the earlier sample is subtracted from the nominal one in the baseline subtractor (BLS). The difference voltage is stored into another analog memory (L2 SCA). On a positive trigger decision, the voltage is retrieved from the memory and digitized in an ADC. The integer number is finally multiplied by 8 if the signal previously proceeded through the  $G = 1$  path. The ADC counts are ultimately transferred to a host computer for storage and analysis.

The readout electronics of the DØ calorimeter is composed of 12 crates containing 12 ADC cards. Each card contains 384 channels which are distributed on 8 BLS cards, each treating the signals of 4 towers with 12 longitudinal depths each. All three calorimeter

	EM	IFH	ICH	MFH	MCH	OH
Number of Modules	1	1	1	16	16	16
Absorber	Uranium	UNb	SS	UNb	SS	SS
Absorber Thickness (mm)	4	6	46.5	6	46.5	46.5
Argon Gap (mm)	0.23	0.21	0.21	0.22	0.22	0.22
Number of Readout Layers	4	4	1	4	1	3
Cells per Readout Layer	2, 2, 6, 8	16	14	15	12	8
Total Radiation Length ( $X_0$ )	20.5	121.8	32.8	115.5	37.9	65.1
Total Interaction Length ( $\lambda$ )	0.95	4.9	3.6	4.0	4.1	7.0

Table 2.2: End Calorimeter Module Parameters. IFH, ICH, MFH, MCH, OH stand for inner fine hadronic, inner coarse hadronic, middle fine hadronic, middle coarse hadronic and outer hadronic section respectively. UNb and SS stand for Uranium-Niobium alloy and Stainless Steel.

cryostats together contain a total of  $12 \times 12 \times (8 \times 4 \times 12) = 12 \times 12 \times 384 = 55296$  channels.

### Calorimeter Performance

The performance of the calorimeter is very crucial for the  $W$  width measurement. The energy resolution can be described as arising from three major sources. The first is the noise term that has a fixed value, independent of the observed signal. The second is the sampling term which reflects statistical fluctuations in the energy deposited in the argon and therefore scales like the square root of the signal size. The third is the constant term, which reflects how well the response of different parts of the detector are

## 2. EXPERIMENTAL APPARATUS

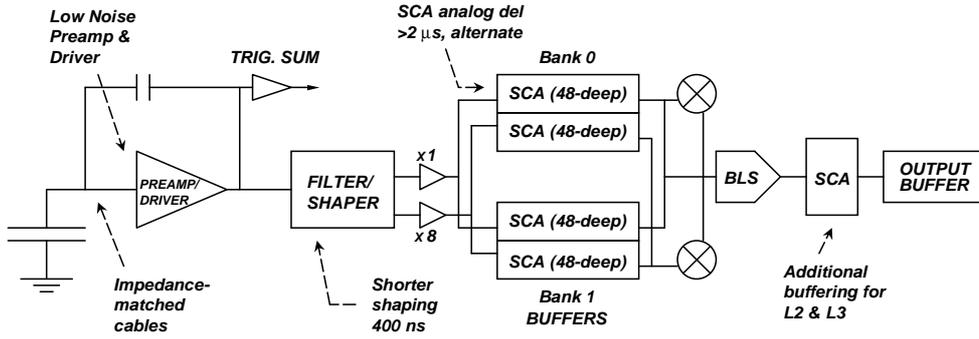


Figure 2.13: Schematic of the primary elements for the DØ calorimeter electronics.

equalized, in other words, how well we understand and calibrate the entire calorimeter. It therefore scales linearly with signal size, assuming the energy is distributed over approximately the same number of readout cells, independent of energy. The energy resolution is thus described using the following functional form:

$$\frac{\sigma_E}{E} = \sqrt{\left(\frac{N}{E}\right)^2 + \left(\frac{S}{\sqrt{E}}\right)^2 + C^2} \quad (2.2)$$

where  $N$ ,  $S$  and  $C$  are the noise, sampling, and constant terms, respectively. In Run I, the three terms were determined to be:  $N = 0.003 \text{ GeV}$ ,  $S_{EM} = 0.15 \text{ GeV}^{1/2}$  [40] [41] and  $C = 1.15^{+0.27}_{-0.36}\%$  [42].

### 2.2.5 Muon System

Surrounding the calorimeter is the muon system [43]. Muons are about 200 times heavier than electrons, and therefore they lose very little energy via bremsstrahlung, unlike electrons. Muon energy loss occurs due to ionization in the detector media, which is a low energy loss absorption process. Therefore, muons above a certain energy threshold (about 3 GeV) pass through the whole DØ detector. Also, since muons are measured after the electromagnetic and hadronic particle showers are absorbed in the

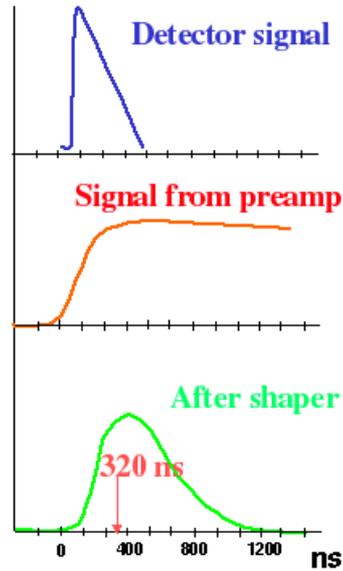


Figure 2.14: Electronics signal shape from the calorimeter cell, after the preamplifier and after the shaper.

calorimeters, muons can be identified in the middle of hadron jets with much greater purity than electrons.

To detect muons, a second tracking system is located outside the calorimeter. This has three layers of detectors giving position measurements, and a toroid magnet with a 1.8 T field located between the first and second layer, allowing a measurement of momentum. Position measurements are provided by drift chambers. These chambers collect charge ionized in a gas by the passage of a charged particle. The gas is held in a sealed volume. The chambers are arranged in planes, four planes make up the central muon system, surrounding the calorimeter and providing coverage up to  $|\eta| < 1$ . Two further planes of detectors are located at either end of the calorimeter, making up the forward muon system. These extend the detector coverage out to  $|\eta| < 2.2$ . The drift chambers provide an accurate (to within 0.5 mm) measurement of the coordinate

## 2. EXPERIMENTAL APPARATUS

---

perpendicular to the sense wires (corresponding to  $\eta$ ). The muon detectors also have layers of scintillating material arranged in pixels; these provide the best measurement of the other coordinate (corresponding to  $\phi$ ). Signals from the drift chambers and scintillators in each region are combined into segments. Segments are then joined in a fit, with a measurement of the bending in the toroidal magnetic field giving a measurement of muon momentum.

# Chapter 3

## Measurement Strategy

This analysis focuses on electron channel due to the low background, good energy resolution and good angular coverage of electrons in the DØ detector. The charge asymmetry  $A_{FB}$  is measured as a function of the invariant mass of the electron-positron pair.

As seen in Eq. 1.52, the most important thing is to measure number of forward and backward events  $N_F$  and  $N_B$  in each invariant mass bin. Also  $A_{FB}$  is really measured using the ratio of the forward and backward events, thus many systematic uncertainties cancelled. The measurement is done in the following steps:

- Apply event selection cuts and obtain number of selected forward and backward events for each invariant mass bin;
- Subtract QCD and other SM backgrounds;
- Apply the energy resolution corrections (called detector resolution unfolding);
- Apply the acceptance (kinematic and geometric) and efficiency corrections (called

### 3. MEASUREMENT STRATEGY

---

acc×eff corrections);

- Apply charge mis-identification corrections;
- Measure the corrected  $A_{FB}$  and compare with the theoretical predictions.
- Extract  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  using the background-subtracted raw  $A_{FB}$  distribution from real data;
- Measure  $Z$  to light quark couplings(vector and axial-vector couplings).
- Measure the differential cross section of Drell-Yan process( $d\sigma/dM$ ).

# Chapter 4

## Event Selection

### 4.1 Data sample

The data sample used in this analysis was collected using the  $D\bar{O}$  detector between June 2002 and April 2009 (Run IIb sample), with run number from 160582 to 251254, duplicated events are removed. Only events passing the standard data quality requirements (dq\_util: v2009-06-13) are kept for the final analysis. Events with negative instantaneous luminosity are also removed.

### 4.2 Trigger

For this measurement, we are interested in the channel with two high  $p_T$  electrons in the final state. We decided to look at events passed diem triggers instead of single EM triggers. In RunIIa, diem triggers are found to be  $100\% \pm 0.001$  efficient for selecting  $Z/\gamma^*$  events with electrons  $p_T > 25$  GeV [44], but in RunIIb, since diem trigger terms are changed in L1, L2 and L3, trigger OR efficiency is not 100%. The CCCC and

## 4. EVENT SELECTION

CCEC trigger OR efficiency versus mass and two electrons  $p_T$  are shown in Fig 4.1 [45]. Those efficiencies will be applied into all of the GEANT MC.

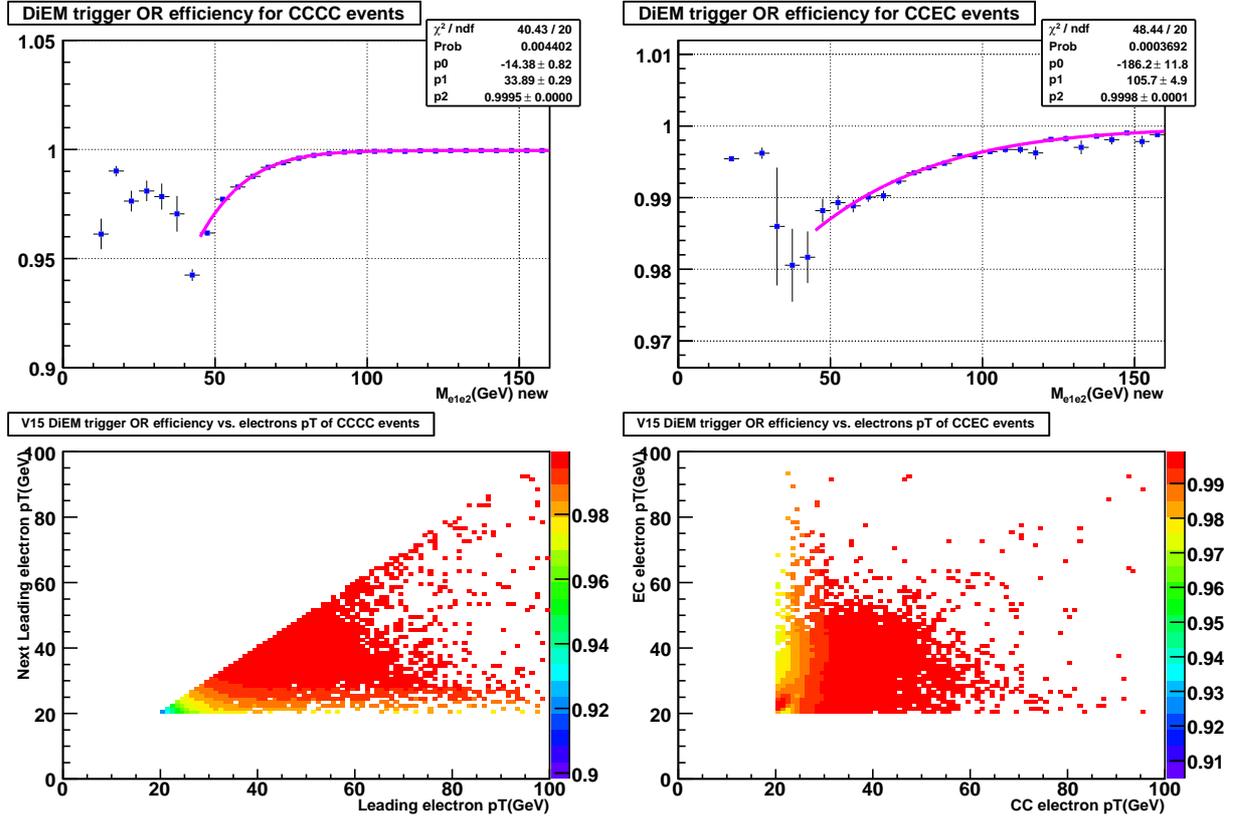


Figure 4.1: Diem trigger OR efficiency versus invariant mass, electron/positron  $p_T$ .

## 4.3 Integrated Luminosity

The total integrated luminosity is  $4.947 \text{ fb}^{-1}$ , and the integrated luminosity in each trigger epoch is listed in Table 4.1, and the luminosity uncertainty is 6.1% [46].

Trigger version	Integrated luminosity (pb <sup>-1</sup> )
v8-11	125.80
v12	230.96
v13	375.55
v14	333.38
v15	1621.63
v16	2259.81
all	4947.13

Table 4.1: Integrated luminosity for different trigger versions.

## 4.4 Event selection

The event selection is used to select signal events and suppress the backgrounds. The following cuts are used to select  $Z/\gamma^*$  candidates:

- $|z_{vtx}| < 40$  cm
- EM cluster requirements:
  - $p_T > 25$  GeV
  - CC:  $|\eta^{det}| < 1$  or EC:  $1.5 < |\eta^{det}| < 2.5$
  - ID=10,  $\pm 11$ , emf>0.9, iso<0.15 in CC and iso<0.1 in EC
  - HMx7< 12 in CC, HMx8< 10 in EC
  - Electron in CC region is required to have a spatial track matching (described below)

## 4. EVENT SELECTION

---

- In CC region, the electron is required to be far away from the module boundary with the extrapolated track  $\text{phimod}$  between 0.1 and 0.9
- Electron in EC region is required to have less activities in the tracker system around this electron (but no track matching requirement for this electron): the scalar sum of transverse momentum of all tracks in annulus cone  $0.05 < dR < 0.4$  should be small than 1.5 GeV.

The EC isolation variable is calculated differently for CC and EC electrons due to different clustering algorithms used in `emreco` for CC ( $\Delta R < 0.2$ ) and EC ( $R < 10$  cm), tighten the isolation requirement for EC electron to remove more QCD backgrounds.

HMx8 cut is chosen based on the studies in [47] to reduce the QCD backgrounds in EC region. The EMID efficiency is found to be close to each other for cutting on 10 and 20, while QCD fake rate drops by a factor of 2.

- Track requirements (The track requirements used here are the agreed "standard" cuts used for several electroweak analyses related with electron charge, more details can be found in [48]):
  - Spatial track match with probability  $> 0.001$
  - Track  $p_T > 10$  GeV
  - At least two SMT hits and nine CFT hits
  - Track fit  $\chi^2/\text{ndf} < 9.95$
  - Beamspot corrected DCA  $< 0.02$  cm

- Event requirements:
  - Pass at least one of the diem triggers
  - At least two EM clusters satisfying the above electron requirements
  - Invariant mass  $50 < M_{ee} < 1000$  GeV
  - Only CC-CC and CC-EC events are used for this measurement
  - Both EM clusters are required to have matched track for CC-CC events, and the two clusters are further required to have opposite charges in order to determine forward/backward event unambiguously
  - For CC-EC events, only CC EM cluster is required to have track matching, and the sign of the CC EM cluster is used to determine forward/backward events. If the CC EM cluster is an electron (positron), the EC EM cluster is assumed to be a positron (electron)

## 4.5 Selected $Z/\gamma^*$ candidates

After the above requirements, we have 157394 events selected with 73707 CC-CC events and 83687 CC-EC events. As mentioned before, we only look at events with dielectron invariant mass between 50 and 500 GeV, and the mass bins we chose are 50-60 GeV, 60-70 GeV, 70-75 GeV, 75-81 GeV, 81-86.5 GeV, 86.5-89.5 GeV, 89.5-92 GeV, 92-97 GeV, 97-105 GeV, 105-115 GeV, 115-130 GeV, 130-180 GeV, 180-250 GeV, 250-500 GeV and 500-1000 GeV. The GEANT MC samples we used were generated with the generator-level  $Z/\gamma^*$  mass  $> 15$  GeV. The reasons we chose to use these bins are the following:

## 4. EVENT SELECTION

---

- The bin widths chosen around  $Z$  pole were determined by the detector energy resolution;
- We used slightly asymmetric bin widths around the  $Z$ -pole due to the fact that more events shift to the low-mass side than high-mass side;
- We considered the fact that the generator-level  $A_{FB}$  reaches the minimum around 67 GeV, changes the sign around 89.2 GeV and becomes flat after 130 GeV;
- For the future analysis, we also plan to measure the  $u$  and  $d$  ratio in the proton based on Fig. 1.12, and the  $A_{FB}$  differences between  $u\bar{u} \rightarrow Z/\gamma^*$  and  $d\bar{d} \rightarrow Z/\gamma^*$  are significant around 50-70 GeV and 100-130 GeV;
- The bin widths for low mass and high mass regions were determined by the limited statistics. The numbers 60 GeV, 130 GeV, 250 GeV, 500 GeV were chosen due to the GEANT MC samples we have were generated with five different mass regions: 40-60 GeV, 60-130 GeV, 130-250 GeV, 250-500 GeV and  $> 500$  GeV.

The invariant mass,  $\cos\theta^*$ , electron/positron  $p_T$  and detector  $\eta$  distributions of all selected candidates are shown in Fig 4.2 for CC-CC events and in Fig 4.3 for CC-EC events. Number of events in each mass bin (also divided into forward/backward events) is listed in Table 4.2.

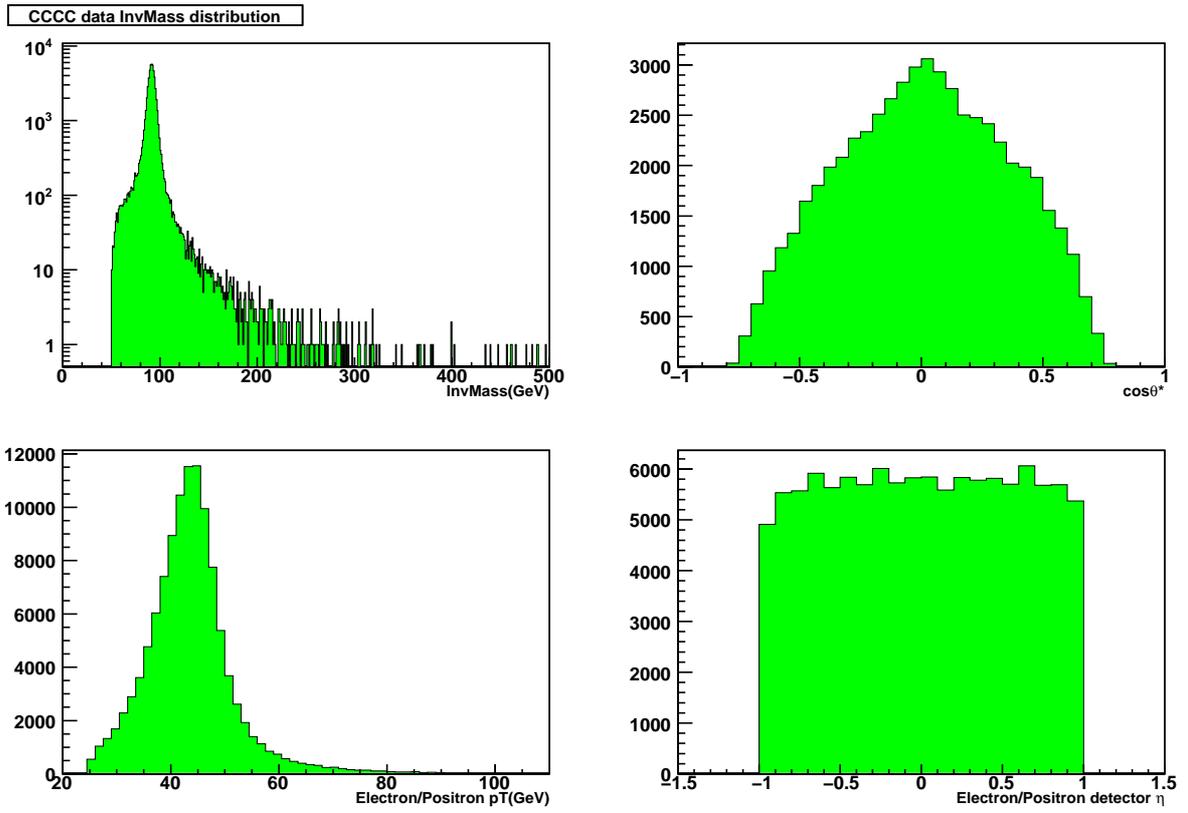


Figure 4.2: Invariant mass,  $\cos\theta^*$ , electron/positron  $p_T$  and detector  $\eta$  distributions for CC-CC candidates.

## 4. EVENT SELECTION

---

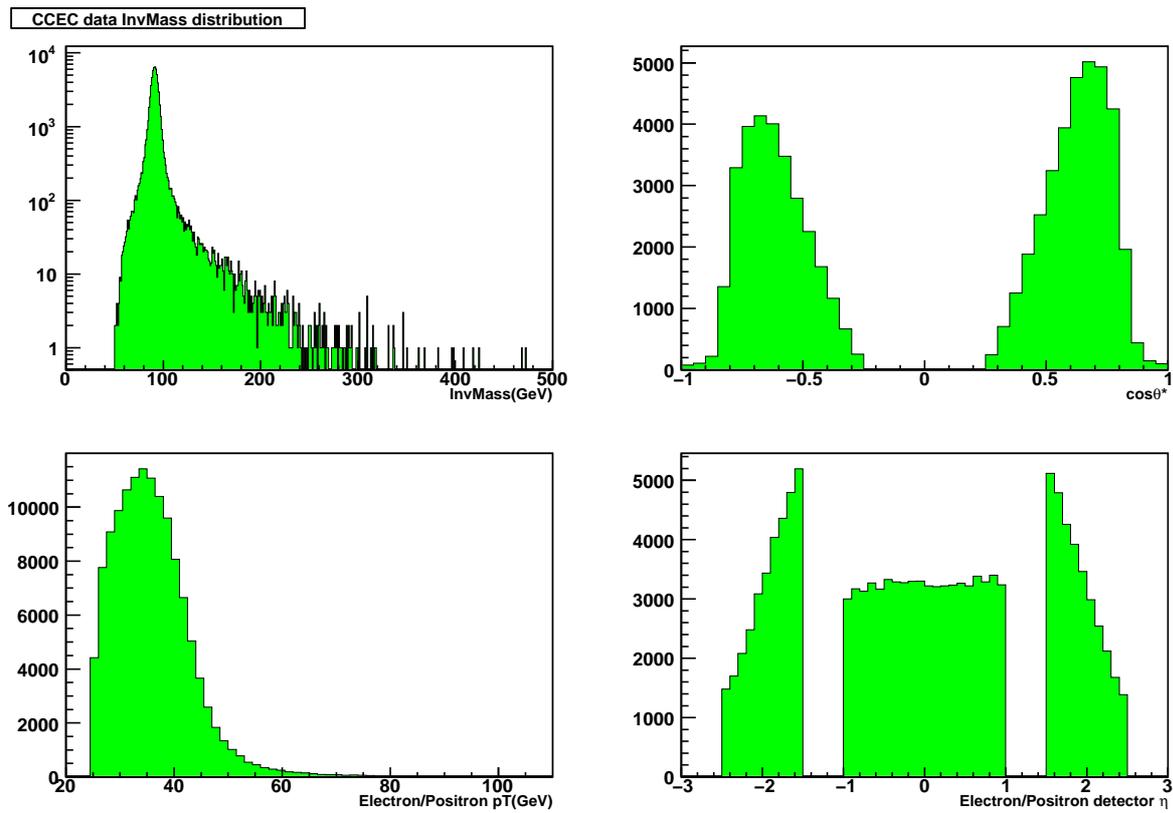


Figure 4.3: Invariant mass,  $\cos\theta^*$ , electron/positron  $p_T$  and detector  $\eta$  distributions for CC-EC candidates.

## 4.5 Selected $Z/\gamma^*$ candidates

Mass Range (GeV)	CC-CC		CC-EC	
	Forward	Backward	Forward	Backward
50 – 60	272	309	53	64
60 – 70	466	707	239	418
70 – 75	409	537	281	489
75 – 81	851	1054	768	1223
81 – 86.5	3309	3519	3760	4178
86.5 – 89.5	6672	6644	8323	7636
89.5 – 92	9323	8807	11123	9558
92 – 97	12138	11041	14278	11365
97 – 105	2861	2182	3698	2155
105 – 115	678	432	1137	400
115 – 130	407	188	766	228
130 – 180	436	151	844	269
180 – 250	137	61	252	73
250 – 500	63	45	84	24
500 – 1000	7	1	1	0

Table 4.2: Number of forward and backward events after selection for CC-CC and CC-EC respectively.

## 4. EVENT SELECTION

---

# Chapter 5

## Efficiencies

### 5.1 Introduction

The GEANT MC simulation of  $Z/\gamma^* \rightarrow ee$  uses the standard  $D\emptyset$  chain, based on PYTHIA [55] with the CTEQ6L1 [56] parton distribution functions (PDFs), and is mainly used to understand the detector’s geometric acceptance for electrons, the energy scale and resolution for electrons in the calorimeter.

The PYTHIA GEANT MC samples we used are listed in Table 5.1. Events with five different mass regions were generated with different integrated luminosities in order to get more events in both low- and high-mass regions. The number of GEANT MC events around  $Z$  peak (15.7 M) is about 15 times the number of observed  $Z$ ’s for the 3.9  $\text{fb}^{-1}$  dataset (1 M). Fig. 5.1 shows the invariant mass of the generator level  $Z/\gamma^*$  boson mass distribution before and after taking into account different integrated luminosities for the five mass regions.

Since the default  $D\emptyset$  GEANT MC simulation can not sufficiently describe the data,

## 5. EFFICIENCIES

---

Mass range	Request IDs	Events	SAM dataset definition
40-60 GeV	see below	4.6M	AFB-Zee-40-60GeV-p21-V1
60-130 GeV	see below	15.7M	AFB-Zee-60-130GeV-p21-V1
130-250 GeV	see below	2.7M	AFB-Zee-130-250GeV-p21-V1
250-500 GeV	see below	3.3M	AFB-Zee-250-500GeV-p21-V1
>500 GeV	see below	470k	AFB-Zee-500GeV-p21-V1

Table 5.1: PYTHIA GEANT MC  $Z/\gamma^* \rightarrow ee$  samples used for  $A_{FB}$  studies. The request IDs for 40-60GeV sample are 104812-104836. And request IDs for 60-130GeV sample are 65752-65753, 65772-65774, 67772, 86882-86886, 86893-86897, 94342-94351, 99432, 99452-99465 and 110012-110051. The request IDs for 130-250GeV sample are 66372, 86892, 94192-94193 and 104837-104846. The request IDs for 250-500GeV sample are 66374, 94195-94198, 104847-104856 and 107932-107934. The request IDs for >500 GeV sample are 66376 and 94199-94200.

the relative scale factors between data and GEANT MC efficiencies were measured and applied to GEANT MC. We divide selection efficiencies into the following three categories: the preselection (ID, emf, iso cuts), EM identification (HMx7, HMx8) and track matching efficiency. In Sect. 5.2, we describe the method used to measure all efficiencies for data and GEANT MC, and the relative scale factor between data and GEANT MC for each efficiency is derived and applied on GEANT MC.

More corrections applied on the simulation are described in Sec. 5.3. The calorimeter energy scale and resolution in the simulation are tuned so that the mean and width of the  $Z$  peak in the simulation are consistent with those from the data (in Sect. 5.3.1),

and then the distributions of instantaneous luminosity and vertex in the simulation are reweighted to data. Since PYTHIA is a LO generator, in order to take advantage of theoretical advances we would like to compare our data to more accurate theoretical predictions. We start with PYTHIA events, and reweight the boson mass  $M$ , transverse momentum  $p_T$  and rapidity ( $y$ ) distributions to agree with higher-order predictions.

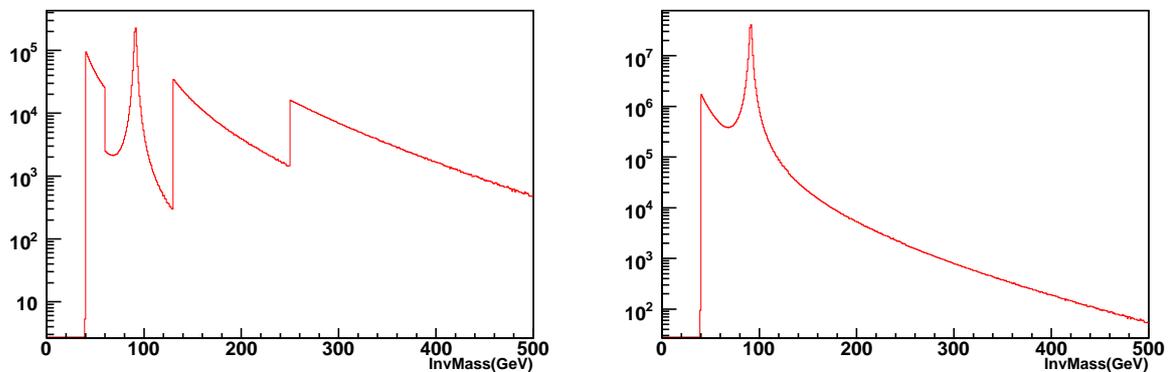


Figure 5.1: Invariant mass distribution of  $Z/\gamma^*$  boson for the GEANT MC samples we used. The left and right plots show number of events before and after taking into account different integrated luminosities for five different mass regions.

## 5.2 Electron efficiencies

### 5.2.1 Tag-Probe method

The standard Tag-and-Probe method is applied to data and GEANT MC samples: an electron candidate passing a requirement tighter than the offline selection cuts is set as a tag leg, the probe leg is selected by employing the  $Z$  mass constraint. Probe electrons

## 5. EFFICIENCIES

---

form a minimally biased electron sample with high purity and are optimal for studying the selection efficiencies. The requirements for the tag leg are required to be in CC fiducial region and the other requirements are listed below:

- transverse momentum  $p_T > 30$  GeV;
- $id = \pm 11$ ,  $iso < 0.10$ ,  $emf > 0.95$ ,  $HMx7 < 12$ ;
- spatial track matching with probability  $P(\chi^2) > 0.001$ ;
- $Lhood8 > 0.90$ ;
- $dz_{vtx} < 3$  cm to ensure that the track coming from primary vertex;
- Track  $p_T > 25$  GeV,  $0.8 < E/P < 1.2$ ;
- Track  $r_{dca} < 0.2$  cm,  $\chi^2/ndof < 5$ ,  $nCFT \geq 9$ ,  $nSMT \geq 2$ .

### 5.2.2 Electron PreSelection efficiency

To obtain the probe leg, a test track opposite to the tag leg is selected with

- track  $p_T > 15$  GeV,  $dz_{vtx} < 3$  cm,  $r_{dca} < 0.2$  cm,  $\chi^2/ndof < 5$ ,  $nCFT \geq 9$ ,  $nSMT \geq 2$ ;
- opposite charge with the tag leg;
- $\Delta\phi(tag\ track, test\ track) > 2$ ;
- $70 < M(tag\ electron, test\ track) < 110$  GeV.

Test tracks are then matched with an EM cluster with  $\Delta R < 0.14$  to obtain the probe EM cluster. The probe EM clusters that satisfying the following requirement are used for preselection efficiency study:

- ID=10,  $\pm 11$ , emf>0.9, iso<0.15(CC) iso<0.10(EC);
- $E_T > 25$  GeV;
- $70 < M(\text{tagEM}, \text{probeEM}) < 110$  GeV.

The preselection efficiency as a function of EM cluster  $E_T$ , detector  $\eta$ , detector  $\phi$  and Vtx\_Z respectively are shown in Fig. 5.2 for CC region and Fig. 5.3 for EC region.

The data/GEANT MC scale factor for the PreSelection efficiency is checked vs all four variables described above, and is found to have some dependence on the electron detector  $\eta$ . This dependence is plotted as a function of EM cluster detector  $\eta$  in Fig. 5.4, and this dependence is corrected in the GEANT MC simulation.

### 5.2.3 Electron ID efficiency

Based on PreSelection, we study electron ID efficiency in both CC and EC region. The probe EM cluster is selected with the PreSelection cuts, and then the number of probe EM clusters that have  $\text{HMx7} < 12$  (CC) and  $\text{HMx8} < 10$  and  $\sum \text{trk} - p_T > 1.5\text{GeV}$  (EC) as the numerator. The electron ID efficiencies of an electron in both CC and EC region versus  $p_T$ , detector  $\eta$ , detector  $\phi$  and Vtx\_Z measured from  $Z \rightarrow ee$  in MC and EM inclusive data samples are shown in Fig. 5.5 and Fig. 5.6.

The data/GEANT MC scale factor for the EMID efficiency is checked vs all four variables described above, and is found to have some dependence on the electron de-

## 5. EFFICIENCIES

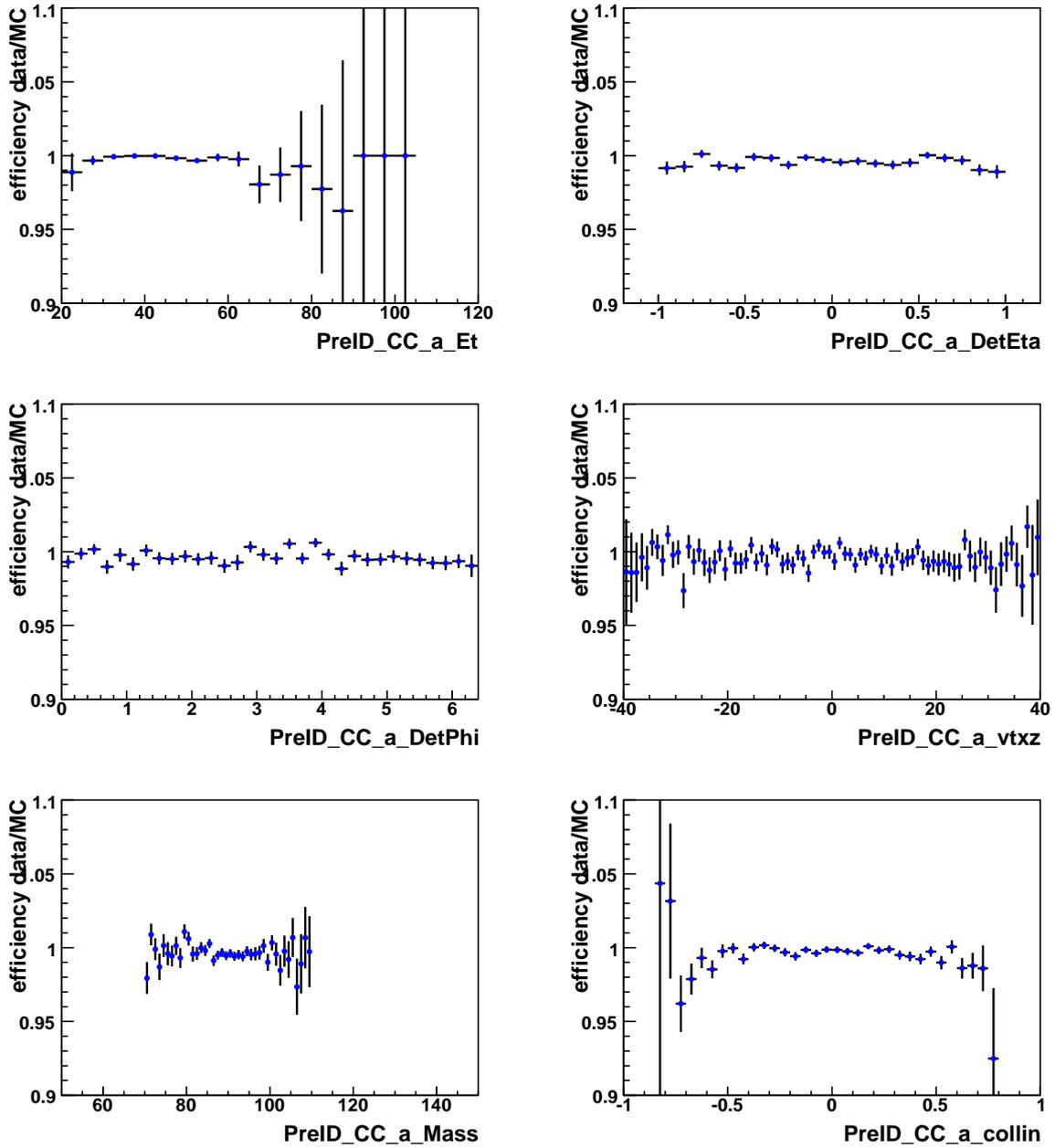


Figure 5.2: Pre-selection efficiencies (CC region) versus EM cluster  $p_T$ , detector  $\eta$ , detector  $\phi$ ,  $Vtx\_Z$ , invariant mass and collin angle of GEANT MC  $Z \rightarrow ee$  and EM inclusive data respectively.

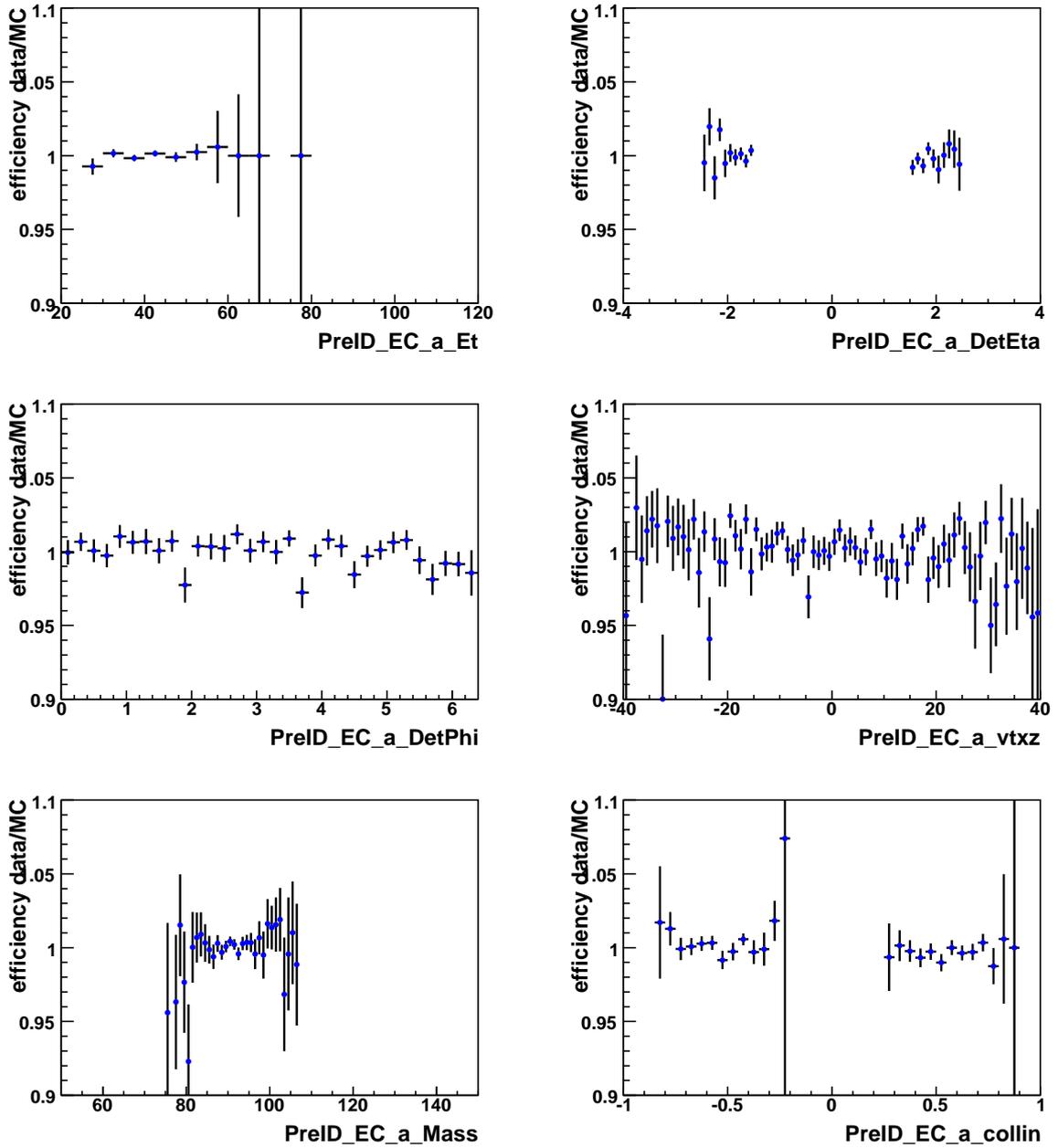


Figure 5.3: Pre-selection efficiencies (EC region) versus EM cluster  $p_T$ , detector  $\eta$ , detector  $\phi$ , Vtx- $Z$  invariant mass and collin angle of GEANT MC  $Z \rightarrow ee$  events and EM inclusive data respectively.

## 5. EFFICIENCIES

---

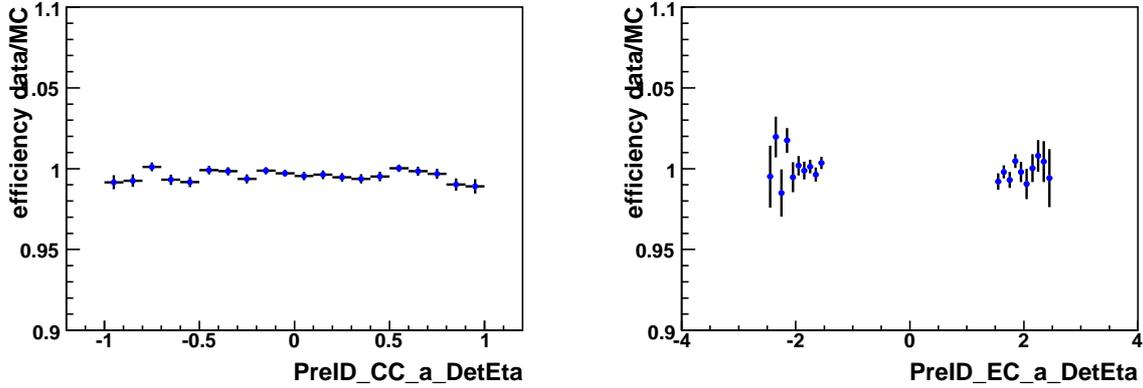


Figure 5.4: The ratio of electron PreSelection ID efficiency between data and MC as a function of EM cluster detector  $\eta$ .

ector  $\eta$ . This dependence is plotted as a function of EM cluster detector  $\eta$  in Fig. 5.7, and this dependence is corrected in the GEANT MC simulation.

### 5.2.4 Electron track match efficiency

Having analyzed calorimeter-based electron ID efficiency, we investigate spacial track match efficiency of an electron. The probe EM cluster is selected with the following requirements:

- In CC fiducial region;
- $p_T > 25$  GeV;
- ID = 10 or  $\pm 11$ , iso < 0.15, emf > 0.9, HMx7 < 12;
- $\Delta\phi$  (tag EM, probe EM) > 2.

For the cluster-track matching efficiency measurement, the number of EM clusters passing above probe criteria is taken as the denominator. Then, the number of probe

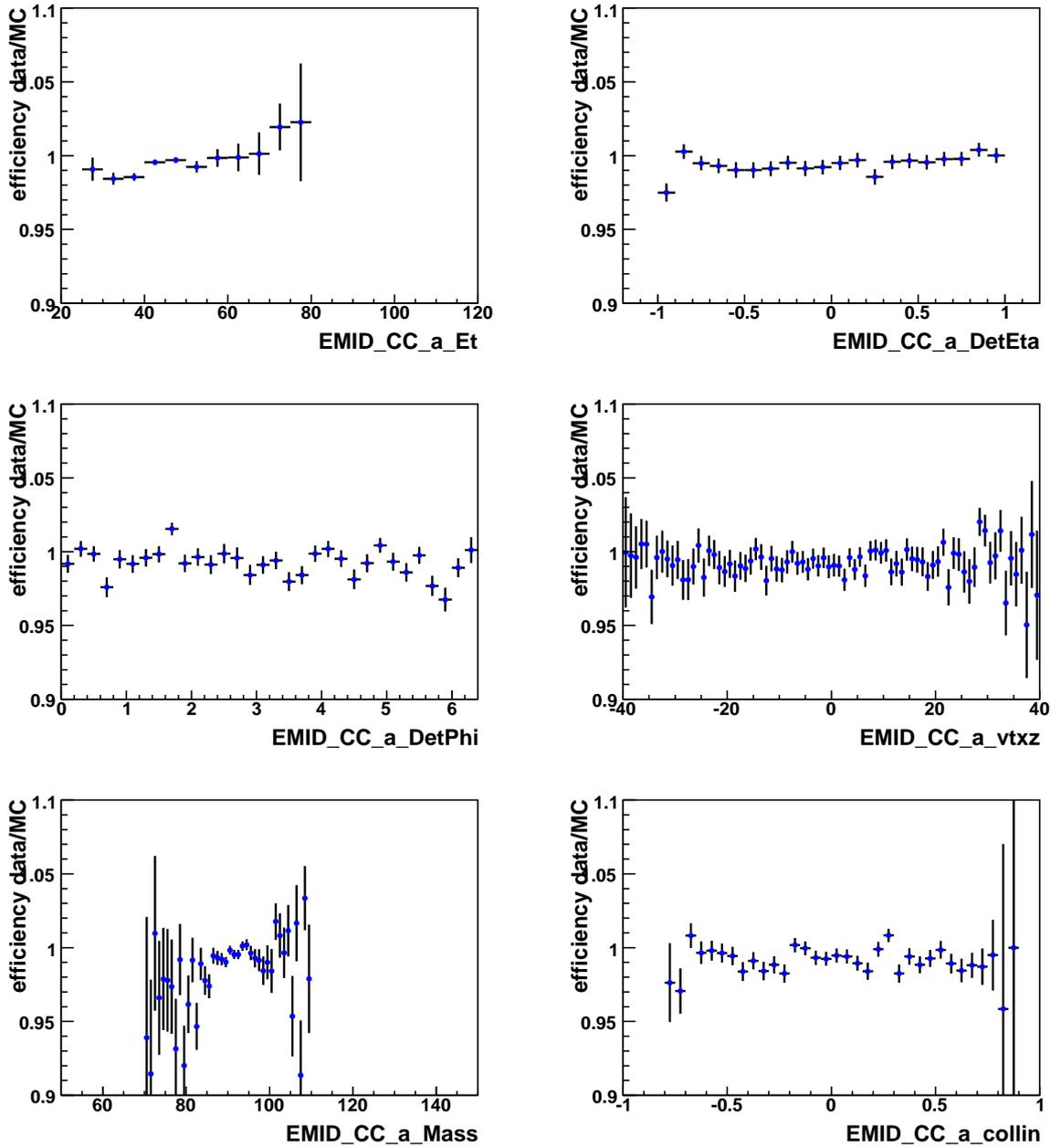


Figure 5.5: electron ID efficiencies (CC region) versus EM cluster  $p_T$ , detector  $\eta$ , detector  $\phi$ , Vtx- $Z$ , invariant mass and collin angle of GEANT MC  $Z \rightarrow ee$  and EM inclusive data respectively.

## 5. EFFICIENCIES

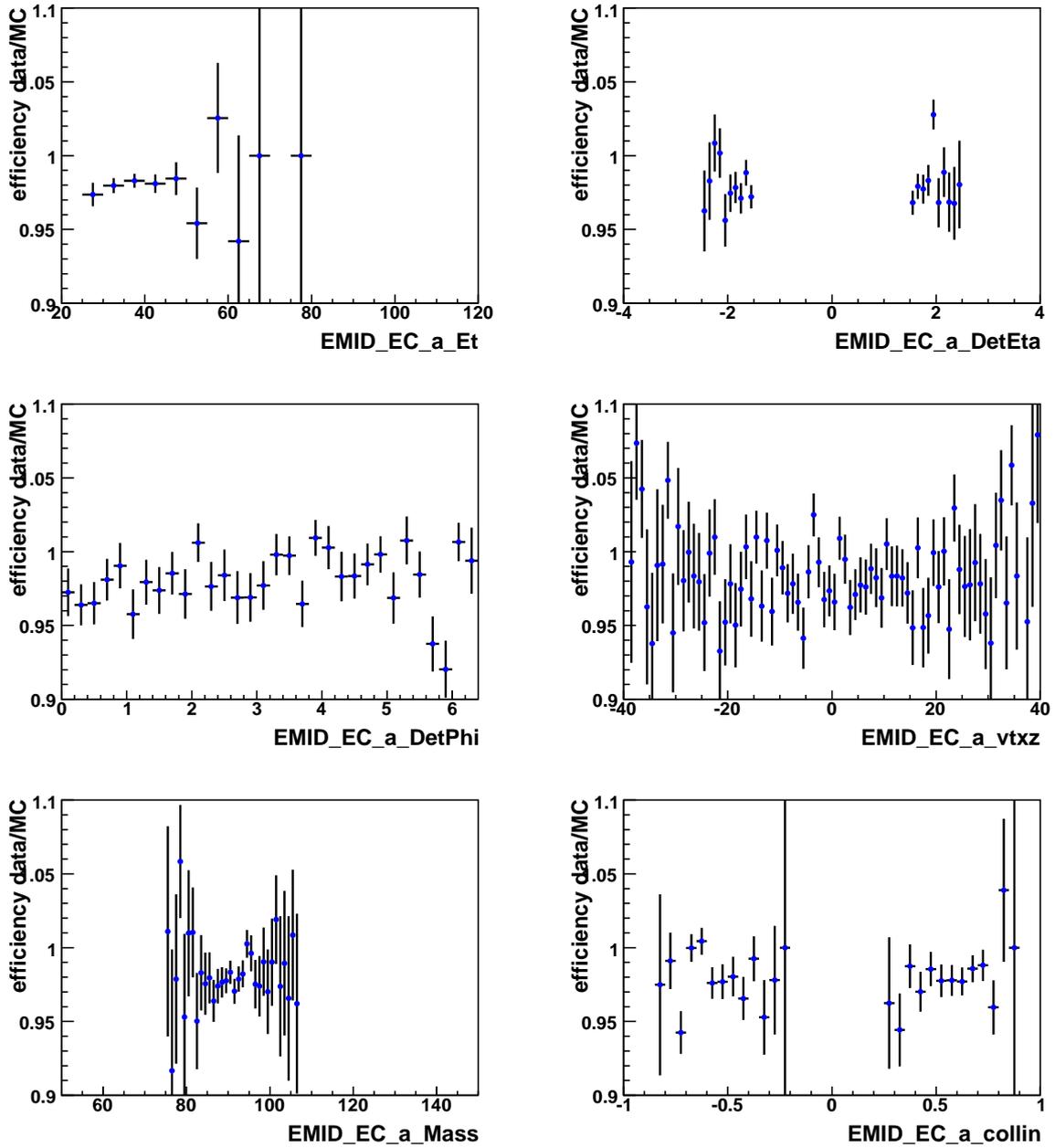


Figure 5.6: electron ID efficiencies (EC region) versus EM cluster  $p_T$ , detector  $\eta$ , detector  $\phi$ , Vtx $_Z$ , invariant mass and collin angle of GEANT MC  $Z \rightarrow ee$  and EM inclusive data respectively.

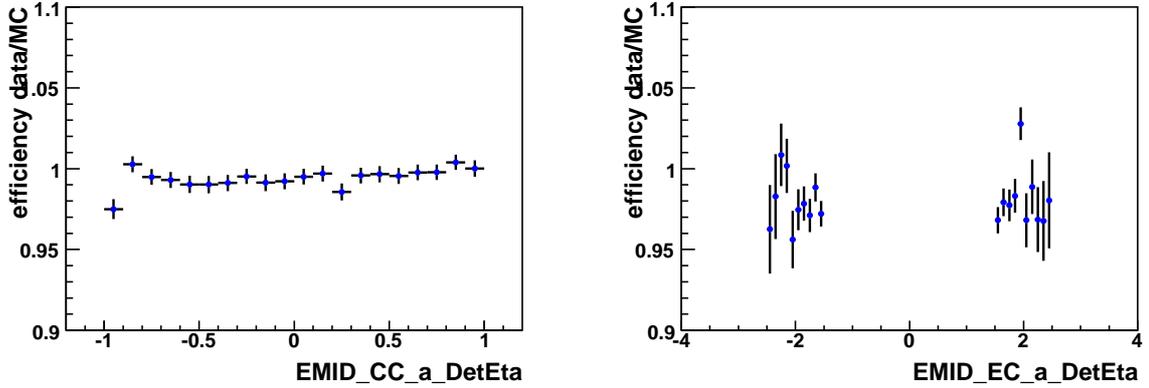


Figure 5.7: The ratio of electron EMID efficiency between data and MC as a function of EM cluster detector  $\eta$ .

EM clusters that have a spacial track matched with :

- $P(\chi^2) > 0.001$ ;
- track  $p_T > 10$  GeV;
- $n_{CFT} \geq 9$ ,  $n_{SMT} \geq 2$ ;
- track fitting  $\chi^2/\text{ndof} < 9.95$ ;
- $rdca < 0.02$  cm(Corrected with beamspot).

is taken as the numerator. The track matching efficiencies of an electron versus  $E_T$ ,  $\eta$  and  $\phi$  measured from  $Z \rightarrow ee$  in GEANT MC and EM inclusive data samples are shown in Fig. 5.8.

The data/GEANT MC scale factor for the EMID efficiency is checked vs all four variables described above, and is found to have some dependence on the electron physics  $\eta$  and  $Z$  of primary vertex. This dependence is plotted as a function of EM cluster

## 5. EFFICIENCIES

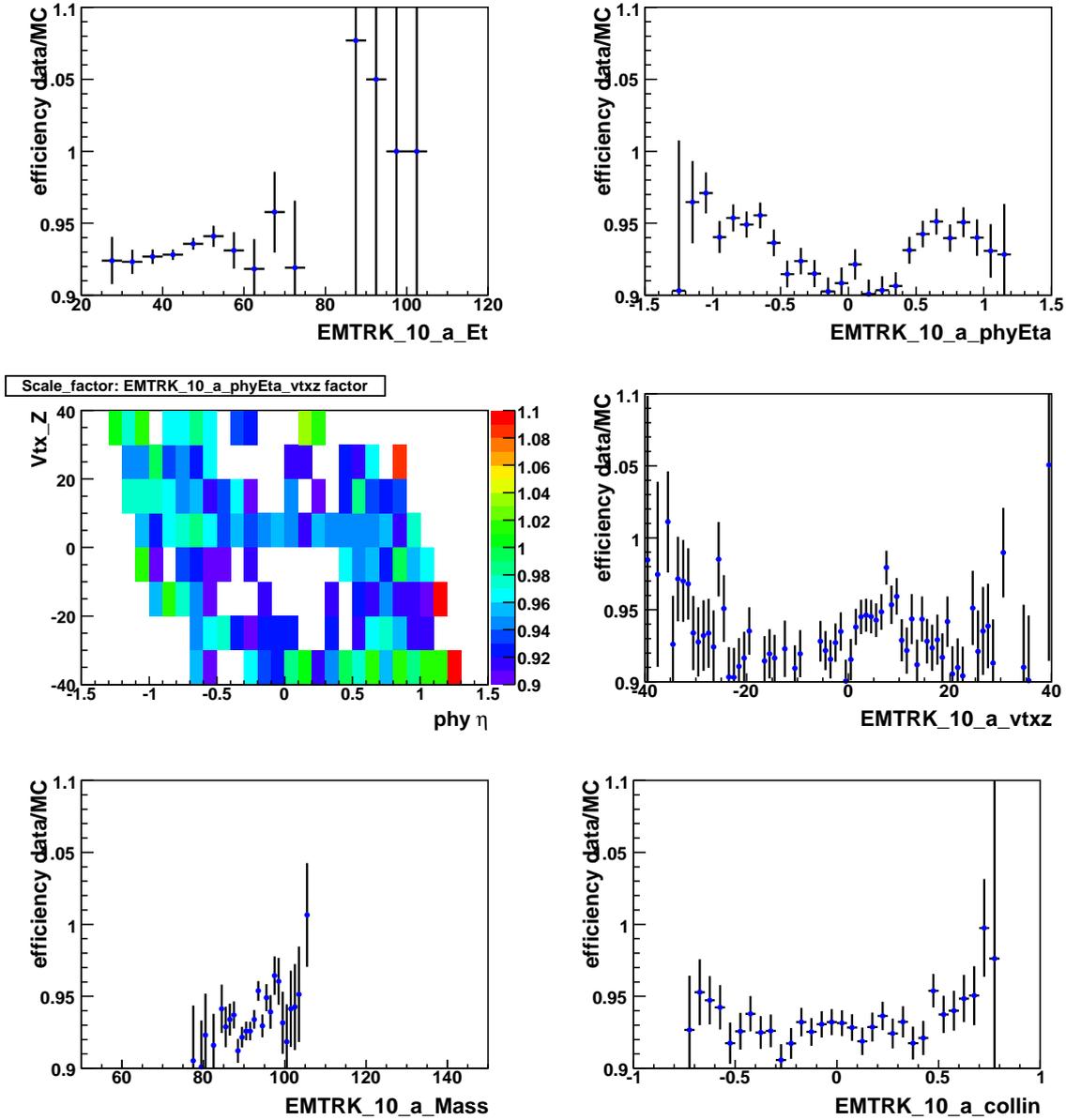


Figure 5.8: Track match efficiencies versus EM cluster  $p_T$ , physics  $\eta$ ,  $V_{tx\_Z}$ , invariant mass and collin angle of GEANT MC  $Z \rightarrow ee$  and EM inclusive data respectively. For real data, the efficiency is lower for physics  $\eta$  close to 0, this is due to the CFT light yield. The structure shown with  $v_{tx\_Z}$  is due to number of SMT hits requirement, the six regions correspond to six SMT barrels.

detector  $\eta$  in Fig. 5.9, and this dependence is corrected in the GEANT MC simulation.

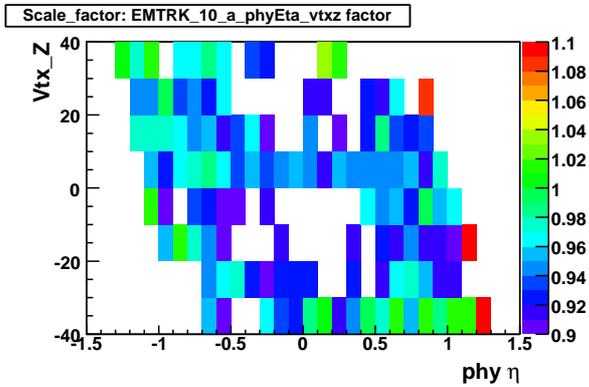


Figure 5.9: The ratio of electron track match efficiency between data and MC as a function of physics  $\eta$  and vtxz.

### 5.2.5 Electron identification corrections

To remove the electron identification difference between data and GEANT MC, we applied corrections for the PreSelection, Electron ID and Track match on MC, which are shown below:

- PreSelection efficiency: applied in 1 dimension (detector  $\eta$ ). Fig. 5.4
- Electron ID efficiencies: applied in 1 dimension (detector  $\eta$ ). Fig. 5.7
- Track match efficiency: applied in 2 dimensions (physics  $\eta$ , vtx-Z). Fig. 5.9

### 5.3 MC Reweighting

#### 5.3.1 Electron energy scale and resolution

The default DØ GEANT MC simulation predicts different  $Z$  peak and width compared with the real data, additional energy scaling and smearing need to be applied on GEANT MC in order to predict the right  $Z$  peak and width as those observed in data.

The additional scaling is done using the following formula:

$$E' = \alpha \times E^{\text{GEANT}} \quad (5.1)$$

and the additional smearing is done using the following formula:

$$E^{\text{smear}} = E'(1 + c \times x) \quad (5.2)$$

where  $E^{\text{GEANT}}$ ,  $E'$  and  $E^{\text{smear}}$  are the raw energy from GEANT MC simulation, the energy after scaling, and the energy after scaling and smearing respectively.  $\alpha$  and  $c$  are the energy scaling and smearing parameters (CC and EC electrons have different  $\alpha$  and  $c$ ), and  $x$  is a random number generated with a Gaussian distribution with zero mean and unit sigma.

To measure the parameters for the additional energy scaling and smearing, we vary the energy scale and smearing parameters and then compare the  $Z$  invariant mass distributions from the tuned GEANT MC simulation and the data. We first use CC-CC  $Z$  events to determine CC parameters, and then use CC-EC events to determine EC parameters.

We vary the additional energy scaling parameter (energy smearing parameter), and calculate the  $\chi^2$  for the  $Z$  invariant mass between the data and the smeared

GEANT MC prediction. A second-order polynomial function is used to determine the best scaling parameters and a change of 1 for the overall  $\chi^2$  is used to determine the systematic uncertainty of these parameters. The scaling parameter is found to be  $1.0021 \pm 0.00027$  for CC and  $0.9941 \pm 0.00027$  for EC. The smearing parameter is found to be  $0.025 \pm 0.002$  for CC and  $0.028 \pm 0.002$  for EC. Since we did not introduce the energy offset for CC and EC electron in the Geant MC simulation (even though all data/MC comparison plots agree pretty well without the additional energy offset term), we decided to increase the uncertainty of both scaling and smearing parameters by varying the parameters by  $\pm 1$  sigma for both CC and EC electrons.

### 5.3.2 Instantaneous luminosity and vertex reweighting

Data and GEANT MC simulation have different instantaneous luminosity and primary vertex distributions, and we reweight the two distributions in GEANT MC to reflect the real data distributions. More detailed information can be found in Appendix A.

### 5.3.3 $Z$ boson $M$ reweighting

A mass-dependent  $k$ -factor is introduced to include higher-order QCD corrections on the  $Z/\gamma^*$  boson invariant mass distribution. The  $K$ -factor is defined as [57]:

$$K = \frac{\sigma_{NNLO \text{ with NLO PDF}}}{\sigma_{LO \text{ with LO PDF}}} \quad (5.3)$$

The NNLO cross sections are obtained from the calculation of Hamberg *et. al.* [58].

The  $K$ -factor as a function of  $M_{ee}$  is shown in Table 6 of DØ note 4476, the  $K$ -factor changes from 1.30 at  $M = 50$  GeV to 1.38 at  $M = 600$  GeV, increasing by  $\sim 6\%$ .

## 5. EFFICIENCIES

---

### 5.3.4 $Z$ boson $p_T$ and $y$ reweighting

The RESBOS generator [59] has been proven to give a more accurate theoretical description of the  $Z/\gamma^*$  boson transverse momentum and rapidity distributions. A boson  $p_T$  and  $y$  re-weighting scheme developed by S. Yacoob *et. al.* [60] is used here. To do this reweighting,  $Z$  pt and  $Z$  rapidity 2D distributions are get from RESBOS and PYTHIA generator, then we take the ratio distribution between RESBOS and PYTHIA to reweight the full MC, which are generated with PYTHIA.

## 5.4 $\phi$ -mod and luminosity correction on both data and MC

### 5.4.1 luminosity correction

For Run IIb data, we observed that the peak position of the  $Z$  boson shifts to lower value as instantaneous luminosity increases [49], while in full MC simulation, the dependence is the opposite way. To reduce this effect on the  $A_{FB}$  measurement, we apply luminosity corrections to the measured electron energy for both data and full MC. The correction functions can be found in Fig. 5.10. They were derived using the electron  $E/p$  peak position [50]. For RunIIb data, there are some differences between pre-2007 ShutDown and post-2007 ShutDown, so we applied two different corrections on those two data sets.

## 5.4 $\phi$ -mod and luminosity correction on both data and MC

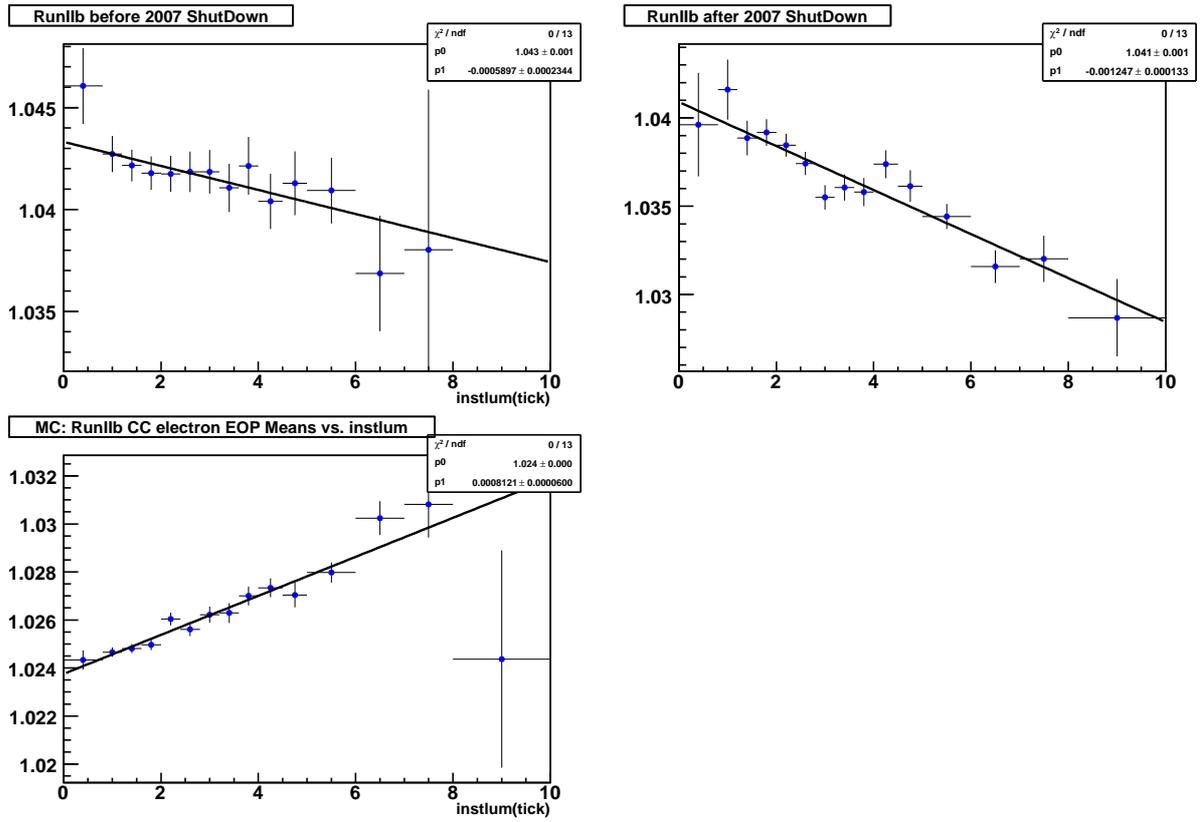


Figure 5.10: Electron  $EOP$ (electron  $E_t$  over electron  $p_T$ ) mean values for difference  $instlum$  bins.

## 5. EFFICIENCIES

---

### 5.4.2 $\phi$ -mod correction

We also applied another electron energy correction for both data and MC [51]. This correction not only focuses on correct electrons not passing the  $\phi$ -mod region, but also will correct electrons in  $\phi$ -mod region in order to move the  $Z$  peak value into the  $LEP$  measured one[52](91.18 GeV).

### 5.4.3 Forward/Backward efficiencies

Since  $A_{FB}$  is calculated using the numbers of forward and backward events, we have to make sure the electron selection criteria we used have little difference for forward and backward events. In this chapter, we investigate the possible difference between forward and backward events due to the selection cuts.

### 5.4.4 Ratio of forward and backward efficiencies

We measure the ratio for PreSelection, EMID and track matching efficiencies for forward and backward events in both real data and GEANT MC simulation. Since there is very little in the detector and analysis cuts we used treat forward and backward events differently, the efficiencies for forward and backward events are very close to each other. Fig. 5.11 and Fig. 5.12 show the ratio of PreSelection efficiencies for forward and backward events in CC and EC regions for both data and GEANT MC simulation. Fig. 5.13 and Fig. 5.14 show the ratio of EMID efficiencies for forward and backward events in CC and EC regions for both data and GEANT MC simulation. Fig. 5.15 shows the ratio of EM track matching efficiencies for forward and backward events in CC region for both data and GEANT MC simulation.

## 5.4 $\phi$ -mod and luminosity correction on both data and MC

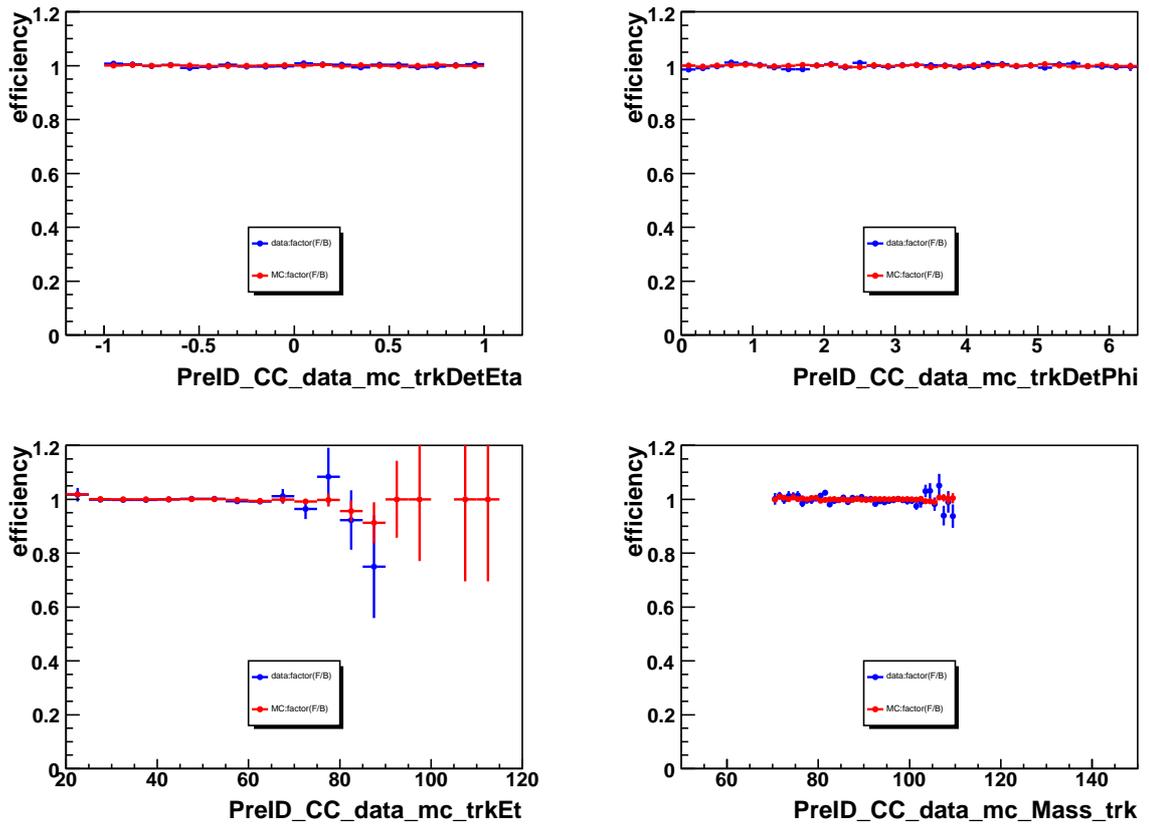


Figure 5.11: Ratio of PreSelection efficiencies for forward and backward events in CC region versus EM cluster  $p_T$ , detector  $\eta$ , detector  $\phi$  and Mass of GEANT MC  $Z \rightarrow ee$  and data respectively. The  $\chi^2/\text{ndof}$  for those four plots are 15.8/20, 22.7/32, 5.6/14 and 52/40.

## 5. EFFICIENCIES

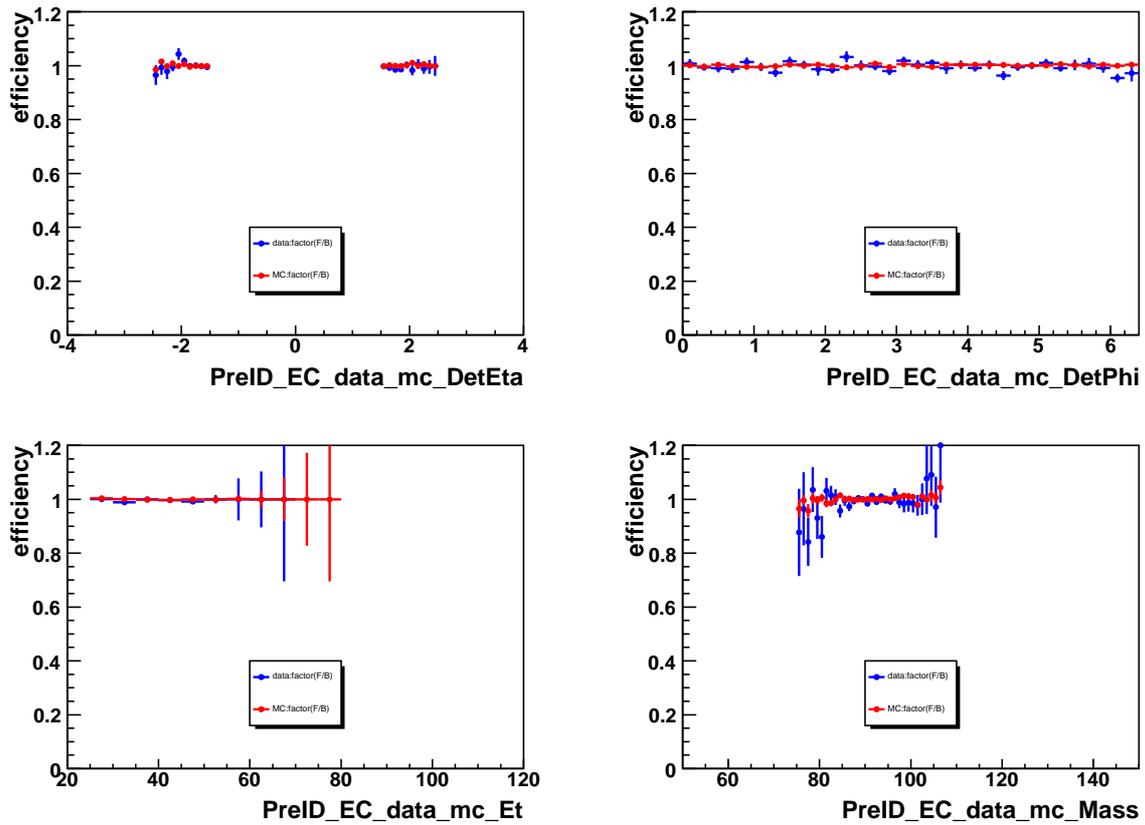


Figure 5.12: Ratio of PreSelection efficiencies for forward and backward events in EC region versus EM cluster  $p_T$ , detector  $\eta$ , detector  $\phi$  and Mass of GEANT MC  $Z \rightarrow ee$  and data respectively. The  $\chi^2/\text{ndof}$  for those four plots are 16.4/20, 29.7/32, 6.3/9 and 36.4/32

## 5.4 $\phi$ -mod and luminosity correction on both data and MC

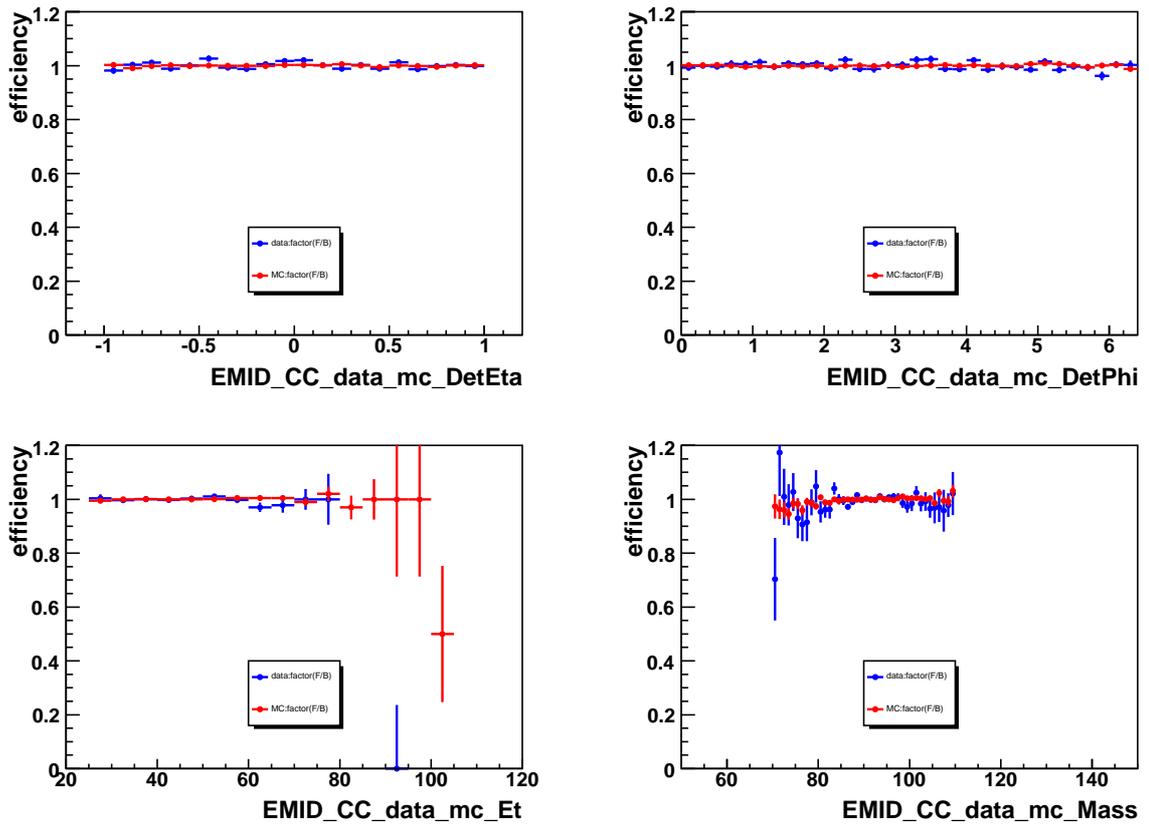


Figure 5.13: Ratio of EMID efficiencies for forward and backward events in CC region versus EM cluster  $p_T$ , detector  $\eta$ , detector  $\phi$  and Mass of GEANT MC  $Z \rightarrow ee$  and data respectively.

The  $\chi^2/\text{ndof}$  for those four plots are 26.6/20, 39.1/32, 7.76/11 and 36.4/40

## 5. EFFICIENCIES

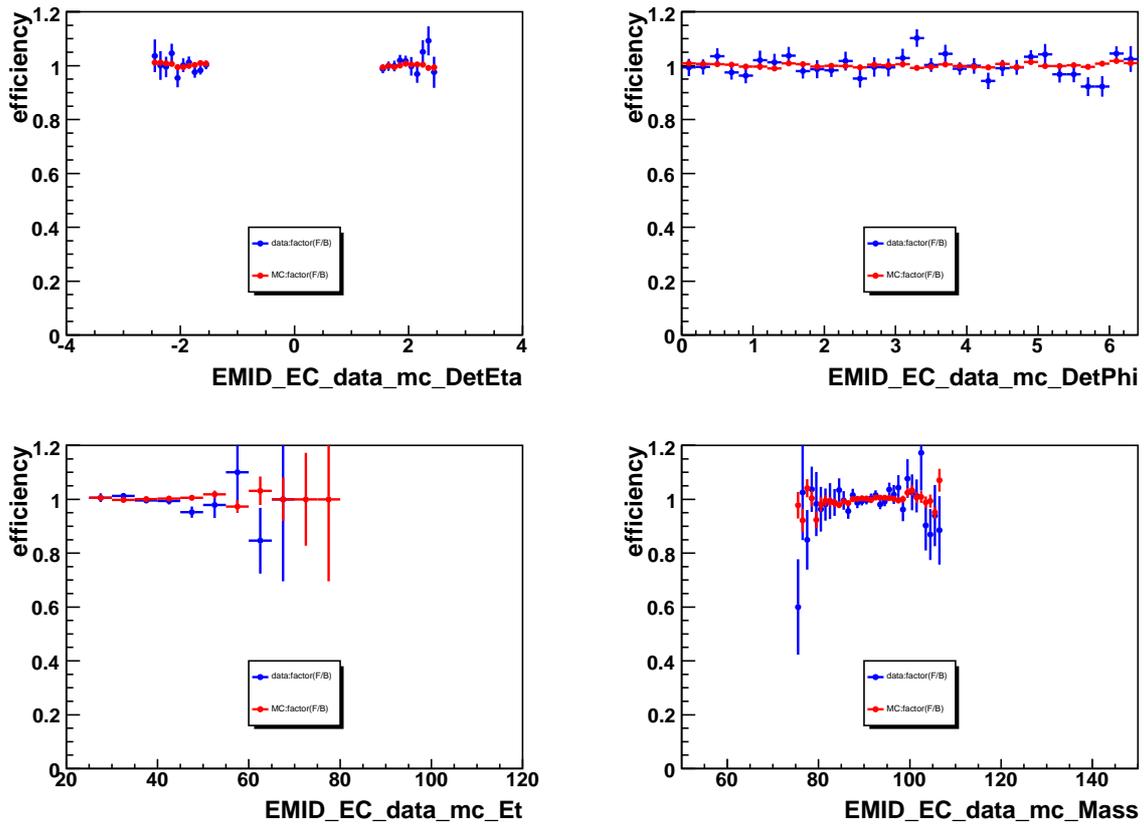


Figure 5.14: Ratio of EMID efficiencies for forward and backward events in EC region versus EM cluster  $p_T$ , detector  $\eta$ , detector  $\phi$  and Mass of GEANT MC  $Z \rightarrow ee$  and data respectively. The  $\chi^2/\text{ndof}$  for those four plots are 14.0/20, 38.5/32, 12.6/9 and 23.9/32

## 5.4 $\phi$ -mod and luminosity correction on both data and MC

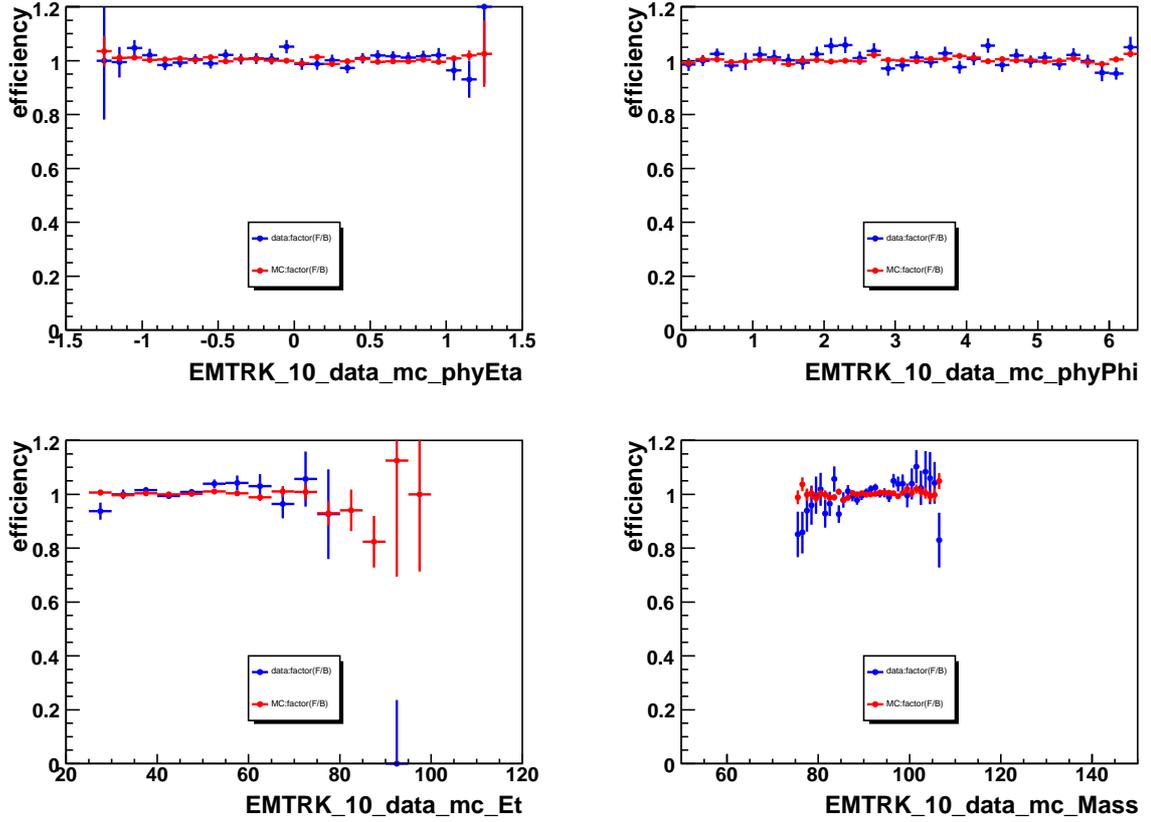


Figure 5.15: Ratio of electrons track match efficiencies for forward and backward events (CC only) versus EM cluster  $p_T$ , physics  $\eta$ , physics  $\phi$  and Mass of GEANT MC  $Z \rightarrow ee$  and data respectively. The  $\chi^2/\text{ndof}$  for those four plots are 21.2/26, 30.1/32, 13.0/11 and 41.0/32

## 5. EFFICIENCIES

---

### 5.4.5 Fitted Ratio values for forward and backward efficiencies

What we really care out is the difference between forward and backward events efficiencies, so we fit the ratio of each forward and backward efficiency to a straight line, and the fitted parameters with errors are listed in Table 5.2 for GEANT MC and in Table 5.4 for real data. The fit probabilities are shown in Table 5.3 and Table 5.5. The ratio between forward and backward efficiencies are observed to be consistent with 1 for both data and GEANT MC, and thus no obvious efficiency differences between forward and backward events observed.

	Det $\eta$	Det $\phi$	$p_T$	Mass
PreSelect(CC)	$1.000 \pm 0.001$	$1.000 \pm 0.001$	$1.000 \pm 0.001$	$1.000 \pm 0.001$
PreSelect(EC)	$1.000 \pm 0.001$	$1.000 \pm 0.001$	$0.999 \pm 0.001$	$1.000 \pm 0.001$
EMID(CC)	$1.000 \pm 0.001$	$1.000 \pm 0.001$	$1.000 \pm 0.001$	$1.000 \pm 0.001$
EMID(EC)	$1.000 \pm 0.001$	$1.001 \pm 0.001$	$1.001 \pm 0.001$	$1.001 \pm 0.001$
	Phy $\eta$	Phy $\phi$	$p_T$	Mass
TrkMatch	$1.002 \pm 0.001$	$1.002 \pm 0.001$	$1.002 \pm 0.001$	$1.001 \pm 0.001$

Table 5.2: Fitted value of forward and backward efficiencies in GEANT MC.

## 5.4 $\phi$ -mod and luminosity correction on both data and MC

---

	Det $\eta$	Det $\phi$	$p_T$	Mass
PreSelect(CC)	0.14	0.12	0.59	0.79
PreSelect(EC)	0.11	0.85	0.92	0.64
EMID(CC)	0.15	0.30	0.85	0.01
EMID(EC)	0.96	0.86	0.92	0.01
	Phy $\eta$	Phy $\phi$	$p_T$	Mass
TrkMatch	0.14	0.11	0.44	0.42

Table 5.3: Fitting probabilities of GEANT MC.

	Det $\eta$	Det $\phi$	$p_T$	Mass
PreSelect(CC)	$1.000 \pm 0.001$	$0.998 \pm 0.001$	$0.999 \pm 0.001$	$0.998 \pm 0.001$
PreSelect(EC)	$0.996 \pm 0.003$	$0.996 \pm 0.003$	$0.996 \pm 0.002$	$0.996 \pm 0.002$
EMID(CC)	$1.001 \pm 0.002$	$1.000 \pm 0.002$	$1.000 \pm 0.002$	$1.000 \pm 0.002$
EMID(EC)	$0.999 \pm 0.005$	$0.998 \pm 0.005$	$0.998 \pm 0.005$	$0.998 \pm 0.006$
	Phy $\eta$	Phy $\phi$	$p_T$	Mass
TrkMatch	$1.005 \pm 0.004$	$1.004 \pm 0.004$	$1.006 \pm 0.004$	$1.005 \pm 0.004$

Table 5.4: Fitted value of forward and backward efficiencies in data.

## 5. EFFICIENCIES

---

	Det $\eta$	Det $\phi$	$p_T$	Mass
PreSelect(CC)	0.87	0.94	0.91	0.21
PreSelect(EC)	0.18	0.50	0.66	0.52
EMID(CC)	0.20	0.17	0.01	0.47
EMID(EC)	0.83	0.18	0.41	0.25
	Phy $\eta$	Phy $\phi$	$p_T$	Mass
TrkMatch	0.90	0.41	0.00	0.06

Table 5.5: Fitting probabilities of data.

# Chapter 6

## Backgrounds

The sources of background to the process  $p\bar{p} \rightarrow Z/\gamma^* + X \rightarrow ee + X$  are:

- QCD events where jets are misidentified as electrons;
- $Z/\gamma^* \rightarrow \tau^+\tau^- \rightarrow e^+e^-\nu_\tau\nu_e\bar{\nu}_\tau\bar{\nu}_e$ ;
- $W + X \rightarrow e\nu + X$ , where X is a jet/ $\gamma$  misidentified as an electron;
- $\gamma + \gamma$  where  $\gamma$  is misidentified as an electron;
- $W^+W^- \rightarrow e^+e^-\nu_e\bar{\nu}_e$ ;
- $W^\pm Z$  where  $Z \rightarrow e^+e^-$ .
- $t\bar{t} \rightarrow Wb + W\bar{b} \rightarrow e\nu b + e\nu\bar{b}$ .

The determination of  $A_{FB}$  requires knowledge of the number of background events and the forward-backward charge asymmetry of the background events in each mass bin.

## 6. BACKGROUNDS

---

The QCD background is the dominant background and is measured using real data, other backgrounds are all measured using tuned PYTHIA GEANT MC simulation and are mostly negligible.

### 6.1 PYTHIA GEANT MC samples

The PYTHIA GEANT MC samples we used to measure SM backgrounds are shown in Table. 6.1 with the cross sections from PYTHIA. And for  $W + X$  backgrounds, we use ALPGEN + PYTHIA GEANT MC samples to estimate the contribution, those cross sections are shown in Table. 6.2

### 6.2 SM backgrounds

The standard model backgrounds are estimated using the PYTHIA GEANT Monte Carlo simulation. Since PYTHIA is a LO-based generator, we scale the LO cross section to the NLO calculations. The NLO cross sections are  $\sigma(Z/\gamma^* \rightarrow \tau\tau) = 252 \pm 9$  pb from [53],  $\sigma(WW \rightarrow e\nu e\nu) = 0.15 \pm 0.01$  pb and  $\sigma(WZ \rightarrow 3l + \nu) = 0.1145 \pm 0.00016$  pb from [54]. The simulated events for each process which pass the selection requirements are used to determine both the invariant mass distributions and the expected forward-backward asymmetries. Number of expected events for each process are shown in Tab. 6.3, Tab. 6.4 and Tab. 6.5 for CC-CC events, Tab. 6.6, Tab. 6.7 and Tab. 6.8 for CC-EC events.

Channel	Events	xsection (pb)
$Z \rightarrow \tau\tau$ (15-60)	1.9M	363.1
$Z \rightarrow \tau\tau$ (60-130)	2.2M	179.6
$Z \rightarrow \tau\tau$ (130-250)	443k	1.348
$Z \rightarrow \tau\tau$ (250-500)	194k	0.1139
$Z \rightarrow \tau\tau$ (>500)	102k	0.004533
$\gamma + \gamma$ (50-130)	1.1M	42.3
$\gamma + \gamma$ (130-250)	1.1M	3.12
$\gamma + \gamma$ (>250)	1.7M	0.49
$WW \rightarrow \text{incl}$	711k	8.003
$WZ \rightarrow 3l + \nu$	364k	0.07844
$t\bar{t}$	1.1M	6.1

Table 6.1: GEANT MC samples used for SM background studies.

## 6.3 QCD background

QCD dijet events may contribute as so-called instrumental background, where both jets are mis-reconstructed as electrons. Even though the rate for a jet to fake as an electron is fairly small due to the very tight track matching requirements we used, dijet events are still the dominant source of background in our sample due to the huge production rate. We do not expect any correlation between the charges of the two fake electrons in the dijet events.

The shape of QCD background is measured by inverting shower shape requirement

## 6. BACKGROUNDS

SM process	ReqId	$\sigma$ (pb)
$W(l\nu)+0\text{lp}$ excl.	CSG_alpgepythia_w+0lp_lnu+0lp_excl_p211100_v2	5885.63
$W(l\nu)+1\text{lp}$ excl.	CSG_alpgepythia_w+1lp_lnu+1lp_excl_p211100_v2	1673.98
$W(l\nu)+2\text{lp}$ excl.	CSG_alpgepythia_w+2lp_lnu+2lp_excl_p211100_v2	401.08
$W(l\nu)+3\text{lp}$ excl.	CSG_alpgepythia_w+3lp_lnu+3lp_excl_p211100_v2	96.74
$W(l\nu)+4\text{lp}$ excl.	CSG_alpgepythia_w+4lp_lnu+4lp_excl_p211100_v2	22.07
$W(l\nu)+2\text{b}+0\text{lp}$ incl.	CSG_alpgepythia_w+2b+0lp_lnu+2b+0lp_excl_p211100_v2	13.75
$W(l\nu)+2\text{b}+1\text{lp}$ incl.	CSG_alpgepythia_w+2b+1lp_lnu+2b+1lp_excl_p211100_v2	6.33
$W(l\nu)+2\text{b}+2\text{lp}$ incl.	CSG_alpgepythia_w+2b+2lp_lnu+2b+2lp_excl_p211100_v2	2.25
$W(l\nu)+2\text{b}+3\text{lp}$ incl.	CSG_alpgepythia_w+2b+3lp_lnu+2b+3lp_incl_p211100_v2	1.07
$W(l\nu)+2\text{c}+0\text{lp}$ incl.	CSG_alpgepythia_w+2c+0lp_lnu+2c+0lp_excl_p211100_v2	35.87
$W(l\nu)+2\text{c}+1\text{lp}$ incl.	CSG_alpgepythia_w+2c+1lp_lnu+2c+1lp_excl_p211100_v2	19.83
$W(l\nu)+2\text{c}+2\text{lp}$ incl.	CSG_alpgepythia_w+2c+2lp_lnu+2c+2lp_excl_p211100_v2	8.03
$W(l\nu)+2\text{c}+3\text{lp}$ incl.	CSG_alpgepythia_w+2c+3lp_lnu+2c+3lp_incl_p211100_v2	3.75

Table 6.2:  $W + X$  contribution is estimated with ALPGEN + PYTHIA Geant MC. The cross sections of  $W$ +jet are given at tree level, and NLO k-factor of 1.30 and 1.47 are applied to light quark (nlp) and heavy quark (2c and 2b) associations respectively.

for electrons in CC ( $\text{HMx7} > 30$ ) and in EC ( $\text{HMx8} > 40$ ) and dropping the electron track match cuts and normalized as described below. The QCD shape around  $Z$  peak region is shown in Fig. 6.2. The systematic uncertainty due to the shape is estimated by using different shower shape cuts. Fig. 6.1 shows the QCD background shapes using different HMx cuts. The uncertainty due to the background shapes is included in the final uncertainty.

### 6.3 QCD background

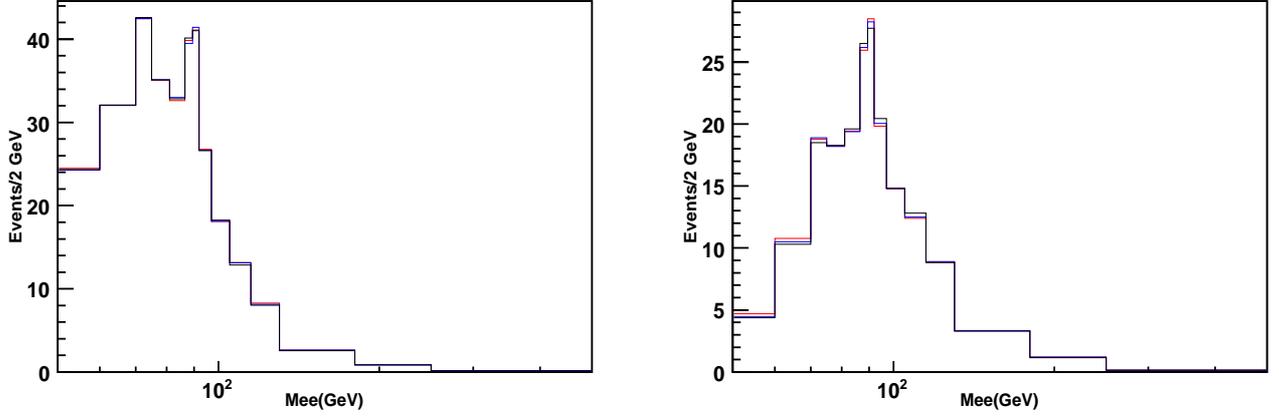


Figure 6.1: QCD background shapes for different HMx cuts in CCCC (Left) and CCEC (Right). For CCCC plot, Red line for  $HMx7 > 12$ , Blue line for  $HMx7 > 20$  and Black line for  $HMx7 > 50$ . For CCEC plot, Red line for  $HMx7 > 30$  in CC and  $HMx8 > 40$  in EC, Blue line for  $HMx7 > 12$  in CC and  $HMx8 > 20$  in EC, Black line for  $HMx7 > 50$  in CC and  $HMx8 > 75$  in EC. The shape difference is propagated to the final  $A_{FB}$  systematic uncertainty.

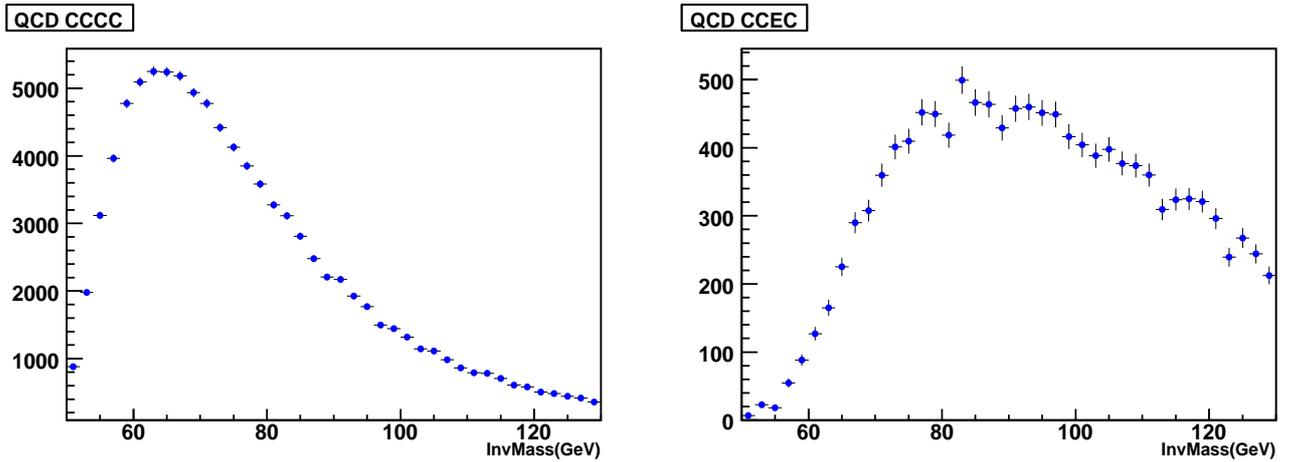


Figure 6.2: QCD background shapes for CCCC(Left) and CCEC(Right). There is no peak around  $Z$  peak region, which means we get a pure QCD sample, no contamination from  $Z \rightarrow ee$ .

## 6. BACKGROUNDS

---

Mass	$Z\tau\tau$		$W + X$	
	Forward	Backward	Forward	Backward
50.0 – 60.0	$7.44 \pm 0.71$	$5.13 \pm 0.60$	$0.24 \pm 0.17$	$0.53 \pm 0.85$
60.0 – 70.0	$15.67 \pm 1.20$	$15.16 \pm 1.17$	$1.55 \pm 0.88$	$0.30 \pm 0.83$
70.0 – 75.0	$5.98 \pm 0.64$	$5.14 \pm 0.60$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.80 \pm 0.96$
75.0 – 81.0	$5.93 \pm 0.64$	$2.25 \pm 0.51$	$0.28 \pm 0.31$	$0.14 \pm 0.13$
81.0 – 86.5	$1.12 \pm 0.49$	$0.17 \pm 0.02$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.05 \pm 0.10$
86.5 – 89.5	$0.16 \pm 0.02$	$0.38 \pm 0.48$	$0.36 \pm 0.61$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$
89.5 – 92.0	$0.39 \pm 0.48$	$0.05 \pm 0.02$	$0.12 \pm 0.10$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$
92.0 – 97.0	$0.39 \pm 0.03$	$0.10 \pm 0.02$	$0.91 \pm 1.25$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$
97.0 – 105.0	$0.29 \pm 0.03$	$0.14 \pm 0.02$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.26 \pm 0.27$
105.0 – 115.0	$0.50 \pm 0.04$	$0.15 \pm 0.02$	$0.47 \pm 0.33$	$0.26 \pm 0.28$
115.0 – 130.0	$0.34 \pm 0.03$	$0.11 \pm 0.02$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.12 \pm 1.22$
130.0 – 180.0	$0.49 \pm 0.04$	$0.32 \pm 0.03$	$0.63 \pm 0.69$	$0.66 \pm 0.38$
180.0 – 250.0	$0.22 \pm 0.02$	$0.09 \pm 0.01$	$0.33 \pm 0.29$	$0.10 \pm 0.26$
250.0 – 500.0	$0.08 \pm 0.01$	$0.03 \pm 0.00$	$0.28 \pm 0.36$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$
500.0 – 1000.0	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$

Table 6.3: SM backgrounds  $Z\tau\tau$  and  $W + X$  forward and backward contributions for the different mass bins of CC-CC events

The normalization is measured by fitting the data  $Z/\gamma^*$  invariant mass as a linear sum of signal, QCD and SM backgrounds in [50, 130] GeV region. The QCD background is especially important for the high mass events which are off the  $Z$  resonance.

### 6.3 QCD background

Mass	$WW$		$WZ$	
	Forward	Backward	Forward	Backward
50.0 – 60.0	$0.83 \pm 0.10$	$1.68 \pm 0.17$	$0.08 \pm 0.01$	$0.10 \pm 0.01$
60.0 – 70.0	$2.17 \pm 0.21$	$2.14 \pm 0.21$	$0.10 \pm 0.01$	$0.12 \pm 0.01$
70.0 – 75.0	$0.92 \pm 0.11$	$1.42 \pm 0.15$	$0.08 \pm 0.01$	$0.08 \pm 0.01$
75.0 – 81.0	$0.69 \pm 0.09$	$1.35 \pm 0.14$	$0.15 \pm 0.01$	$0.12 \pm 0.01$
81.0 – 86.5	$0.79 \pm 0.10$	$0.47 \pm 0.08$	$0.36 \pm 0.02$	$0.29 \pm 0.02$
86.5 – 89.5	$0.70 \pm 0.10$	$0.51 \pm 0.08$	$0.75 \pm 0.05$	$0.71 \pm 0.04$
89.5 – 92.0	$0.28 \pm 0.08$	$0.74 \pm 0.10$	$1.41 \pm 0.09$	$1.19 \pm 0.07$
92.0 – 97.0	$0.57 \pm 0.09$	$0.70 \pm 0.10$	$1.63 \pm 0.10$	$1.45 \pm 0.09$
97.0 – 105.0	$0.93 \pm 0.11$	$1.91 \pm 0.19$	$0.28 \pm 0.02$	$0.25 \pm 0.02$
105.0 – 115.0	$1.21 \pm 0.13$	$1.45 \pm 0.15$	$0.08 \pm 0.01$	$0.10 \pm 0.01$
115.0 – 130.0	$1.38 \pm 0.14$	$1.19 \pm 0.13$	$0.08 \pm 0.00$	$0.07 \pm 0.00$
130.0 – 180.0	$2.39 \pm 0.23$	$2.04 \pm 0.20$	$0.10 \pm 0.01$	$0.09 \pm 0.01$
180.0 – 250.0	$1.27 \pm 0.13$	$0.93 \pm 0.11$	$0.05 \pm 0.00$	$0.03 \pm 0.00$
250.0 – 500.0	$0.85 \pm 0.10$	$0.27 \pm 0.08$	$0.02 \pm 0.00$	$0.01 \pm 0.00$
500.0 – 1000.0	$0.07 \pm 0.07$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$

Table 6.4: SM backgrounds  $WW$  and  $WZ$  forward and backward contributions for the different mass bins of CC-CC events

QCD background contributions are shown in Table 6.9 for CC-CC and Table 6.10 for CCEC events.

## 6. BACKGROUNDS

---

Mass	$\gamma\gamma$		$t\bar{t}$	
	Forward	Backward	Forward	Backward
50.0 – 60.0	$0.22 \pm 0.24$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.59 \pm 0.10$	$0.92 \pm 0.15$
60.0 – 70.0	$0.07 \pm 0.24$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$1.20 \pm 0.19$	$1.40 \pm 0.22$
70.0 – 75.0	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.77 \pm 0.13$	$0.65 \pm 0.11$
75.0 – 81.0	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.86 \pm 0.14$	$0.75 \pm 0.12$
81.0 – 86.5	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.76 \pm 0.12$	$0.77 \pm 0.12$
86.5 – 89.5	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.29 \pm 0.05$	$0.34 \pm 0.06$
89.5 – 92.0	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.44 \pm 0.07$	$0.29 \pm 0.05$
92.0 – 97.0	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.64 \pm 0.11$	$0.68 \pm 0.11$
97.0 – 105.0	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.83 \pm 0.13$	$1.16 \pm 0.19$
105.0 – 115.0	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.60 \pm 0.10$	$0.81 \pm 0.13$
115.0 – 130.0	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.81 \pm 0.13$	$1.34 \pm 0.22$
130.0 – 180.0	$0.01 \pm 0.02$	$0.02 \pm 0.02$	$2.19 \pm 0.35$	$2.14 \pm 0.34$
180.0 – 250.0	$0.03 \pm 0.02$	$0.02 \pm 0.02$	$0.86 \pm 0.14$	$0.79 \pm 0.13$
250.0 – 500.0	$0.01 \pm 0.00$	$0.03 \pm 0.00$	$0.28 \pm 0.05$	$0.28 \pm 0.05$
500.0 – 1000.0	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$

Table 6.5: SM backgrounds  $\gamma\gamma$  and  $t\bar{t}$  forward and backward contributions for the different mass bins of CC-CC events

Mass	$Z\tau\tau$		$W + X$	
	Forward	Backward	Forward	Backward
50.0 – 60.0	$1.48 \pm 0.49$	$0.22 \pm 0.48$	$10.69 \pm 4.38$	$2.96 \pm 1.56$
60.0 – 70.0	$6.36 \pm 0.66$	$4.41 \pm 0.57$	$13.58 \pm 7.09$	$3.90 \pm 2.24$
70.0 – 75.0	$7.17 \pm 0.70$	$4.16 \pm 0.56$	$13.60 \pm 4.35$	$2.12 \pm 0.90$
75.0 – 81.0	$5.54 \pm 0.62$	$1.30 \pm 0.49$	$14.43 \pm 4.84$	$2.08 \pm 1.21$
81.0 – 86.5	$2.30 \pm 0.51$	$0.55 \pm 0.48$	$17.86 \pm 8.32$	$4.82 \pm 2.46$
86.5 – 89.5	$0.51 \pm 0.48$	$0.01 \pm 0.02$	$6.20 \pm 2.55$	$3.65 \pm 1.49$
89.5 – 92.0	$1.14 \pm 0.49$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$7.74 \pm 3.03$	$3.62 \pm 1.61$
92.0 – 97.0	$0.42 \pm 0.48$	$0.04 \pm 0.02$	$16.31 \pm 5.19$	$1.56 \pm 0.82$
97.0 – 105.0	$0.34 \pm 0.03$	$0.09 \pm 0.02$	$19.93 \pm 10.8$	$4.38 \pm 2.58$
105.0 – 115.0	$0.40 \pm 0.03$	$0.07 \pm 0.02$	$17.00 \pm 11.3$	$3.79 \pm 2.57$
115.0 – 130.0	$0.48 \pm 0.04$	$0.10 \pm 0.02$	$24.16 \pm 15.5$	$5.50 \pm 3.67$
130.0 – 180.0	$1.44 \pm 0.49$	$0.22 \pm 0.48$	$31.31 \pm 17.6$	$11.49 \pm 10.1$
180.0 – 250.0	$0.23 \pm 0.02$	$0.18 \pm 0.48$	$13.96 \pm 14.4$	$2.68 \pm 2.87$
250.0 – 500.0	$0.08 \pm 0.02$	$0.01 \pm 0.00$	$3.63 \pm 3.37$	$0.50 \pm 0.74$
500.0 – 1000.0	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$

Table 6.6: SM backgrounds  $Z\tau\tau$  and  $W + X$  forward and backward contributions for the different mass bins of CC-EC events

## 6. BACKGROUNDS

---

Mass	$WW$		$WZ$	
	Forward	Backward	Forward	Backward
50.0 – 60.0	$0.30 \pm 0.08$	$0.53 \pm 0.09$	$0.03 \pm 0.00$	$0.05 \pm 0.00$
60.0 – 70.0	$0.33 \pm 0.08$	$0.64 \pm 0.09$	$0.06 \pm 0.00$	$0.08 \pm 0.00$
70.0 – 75.0	$0.19 \pm 0.07$	$0.60 \pm 0.09$	$0.06 \pm 0.00$	$0.06 \pm 0.00$
75.0 – 81.0	$0.42 \pm 0.08$	$0.60 \pm 0.09$	$0.09 \pm 0.01$	$0.12 \pm 0.01$
81.0 – 86.5	$0.39 \pm 0.08$	$0.71 \pm 0.10$	$0.21 \pm 0.01$	$0.24 \pm 0.01$
86.5 – 89.5	$0.21 \pm 0.07$	$0.89 \pm 0.11$	$0.54 \pm 0.03$	$0.51 \pm 0.03$
89.5 – 92.0	$0.36 \pm 0.08$	$0.41 \pm 0.08$	$0.87 \pm 0.05$	$0.72 \pm 0.04$
92.0 – 97.0	$0.74 \pm 0.10$	$0.71 \pm 0.10$	$1.18 \pm 0.07$	$0.96 \pm 0.06$
97.0 – 105.0	$0.84 \pm 0.10$	$1.29 \pm 0.14$	$0.27 \pm 0.02$	$0.26 \pm 0.02$
105.0 – 115.0	$1.13 \pm 0.12$	$0.91 \pm 0.11$	$0.17 \pm 0.01$	$0.17 \pm 0.01$
115.0 – 130.0	$1.91 \pm 0.19$	$1.42 \pm 0.15$	$0.21 \pm 0.01$	$0.20 \pm 0.01$
130.0 – 180.0	$5.27 \pm 0.48$	$1.83 \pm 0.18$	$0.49 \pm 0.03$	$0.38 \pm 0.02$
180.0 – 250.0	$2.05 \pm 0.20$	$0.95 \pm 0.11$	$0.32 \pm 0.02$	$0.16 \pm 0.01$
250.0 – 500.0	$0.65 \pm 0.09$	$0.10 \pm 0.07$	$0.19 \pm 0.01$	$0.05 \pm 0.00$
500.0 – 1000.0	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$

Table 6.7: SM backgrounds  $WW$  and  $WZ$  forward and backward contributions for the different mass bins of CC-EC events

Mass	$\gamma\gamma$		$t\bar{t}$	
	Forward	Backward	Forward	Backward
50.0 – 60.0	$0.80 \pm 0.25$	$0.54 \pm 0.25$	$0.09 \pm 0.03$	$0.16 \pm 0.03$
60.0 – 70.0	$3.02 \pm 0.36$	$2.85 \pm 0.35$	$0.20 \pm 0.04$	$0.18 \pm 0.04$
70.0 – 75.0	$1.08 \pm 0.26$	$2.32 \pm 0.32$	$0.10 \pm 0.03$	$0.24 \pm 0.04$
75.0 – 81.0	$1.59 \pm 0.28$	$1.66 \pm 0.28$	$0.13 \pm 0.03$	$0.19 \pm 0.04$
81.0 – 86.5	$2.26 \pm 0.32$	$2.33 \pm 0.32$	$0.08 \pm 0.03$	$0.10 \pm 0.03$
86.5 – 89.5	$1.16 \pm 0.26$	$1.44 \pm 0.27$	$0.08 \pm 0.03$	$0.04 \pm 0.02$
89.5 – 92.0	$0.29 \pm 0.24$	$1.09 \pm 0.26$	$0.14 \pm 0.03$	$0.12 \pm 0.03$
92.0 – 97.0	$2.00 \pm 0.30$	$2.68 \pm 0.34$	$0.10 \pm 0.03$	$0.12 \pm 0.03$
97.0 – 105.0	$2.00 \pm 0.30$	$2.20 \pm 0.31$	$0.28 \pm 0.05$	$0.25 \pm 0.05$
105.0 – 115.0	$1.91 \pm 0.30$	$2.72 \pm 0.34$	$0.22 \pm 0.04$	$0.29 \pm 0.05$
115.0 – 130.0	$2.00 \pm 0.30$	$2.60 \pm 0.33$	$0.71 \pm 0.12$	$0.39 \pm 0.07$
130.0 – 180.0	$4.50 \pm 0.28$	$4.95 \pm 0.39$	$0.86 \pm 0.14$	$0.98 \pm 0.16$
180.0 – 250.0	$2.81 \pm 0.17$	$2.99 \pm 0.18$	$0.47 \pm 0.08$	$0.54 \pm 0.09$
250.0 – 500.0	$1.23 \pm 0.20$	$1.25 \pm 0.20$	$0.09 \pm 0.03$	$0.06 \pm 0.02$
500.0 – 1000.0	$0.04 \pm 0.01$	$0.03 \pm 0.00$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$

Table 6.8: SM backgrounds  $\gamma\gamma$  and  $t\bar{t}$  forward and backward contributions for the different mass bins of CC-EC events

## 6. BACKGROUNDS

---

Mass	<i>QCD</i>	
	Forward	Backward
50.0 – 60.0	$25.70 \pm 0.00$	$25.62 \pm 0.00$
60.0 – 70.0	$44.91 \pm 0.00$	$44.70 \pm 0.00$
70.0 – 75.0	$19.56 \pm 0.00$	$19.80 \pm 0.00$
75.0 – 81.0	$19.56 \pm 0.00$	$19.14 \pm 0.00$
81.0 – 86.5	$14.28 \pm 0.00$	$14.43 \pm 0.00$
86.5 – 89.5	$6.12 \pm 0.00$	$6.11 \pm 0.00$
89.5 – 92.0	$4.58 \pm 0.00$	$4.77 \pm 0.00$
92.0 – 97.0	$7.63 \pm 0.00$	$7.85 \pm 0.00$
97.0 – 105.0	$9.36 \pm 0.00$	$8.93 \pm 0.00$
105.0 – 115.0	$7.51 \pm 0.00$	$7.49 \pm 0.00$
115.0 – 130.0	$6.53 \pm 0.00$	$6.50 \pm 0.00$
130.0 – 180.0	$7.61 \pm 0.00$	$7.40 \pm 0.00$
180.0 – 250.0	$1.58 \pm 0.00$	$1.77 \pm 0.00$
250.0 – 500.0	$0.38 \pm 0.00$	$0.43 \pm 0.00$
500.0 – 1000.0	$0.01 \pm 0.00$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$

Table 6.9: QCD backgrounds forward and backward contributions for the different mass bins of CC-CC events

Mass	<i>QCD</i>	
	Forward	Backward
50.0 – 60.0	$6.35 \pm 0.04$	$6.39 \pm 0.04$
60.0 – 70.0	$36.31 \pm 0.09$	$38.45 \pm 0.10$
70.0 – 75.0	$31.86 \pm 0.09$	$32.08 \pm 0.09$
75.0 – 81.0	$43.75 \pm 0.10$	$44.54 \pm 0.10$
81.0 – 86.5	$44.85 \pm 0.10$	$42.56 \pm 0.10$
86.5 – 89.5	$23.37 \pm 0.08$	$22.27 \pm 0.07$
89.5 – 92.0	$19.40 \pm 0.07$	$17.59 \pm 0.07$
92.0 – 97.0	$37.56 \pm 0.10$	$38.47 \pm 0.10$
97.0 – 105.0	$52.75 \pm 0.11$	$56.26 \pm 0.12$
105.0 – 115.0	$58.45 \pm 0.12$	$61.46 \pm 0.12$
115.0 – 130.0	$68.41 \pm 0.13$	$70.15 \pm 0.13$
130.0 – 180.0	$114.11 \pm 0.17$	$110.49 \pm 0.16$
180.0 – 250.0	$27.42 \pm 0.08$	$30.57 \pm 0.09$
250.0 – 500.0	$5.54 \pm 0.04$	$5.99 \pm 0.04$
500.0 – 1000.0	$0.00 \pm 0.00$	$0.00 \pm 0.00$

Table 6.10: QCD backgrounds forward and backward contributions for the different mass bins of CC-EC events

## 6. BACKGROUNDS

### 6.4 Comparison between Data and Signal+QCD+SM

#### backgrounds:

Using the event selection cuts described before, we compare the invariant mass,  $\cos \theta^*$ , electron/positron  $p_T$ , detector  $\eta$ , detector  $\phi$  and Vtx-Z of selected data and signal+QCD+SM events. The CC-CC and CC-EC comparisons are shown from Fig. 6.3 to Fig. 6.10. Good agreement between real data and MC signal + SM and QCD backgrounds are observed for all distributions. We also give the KS probability between the two histograms.

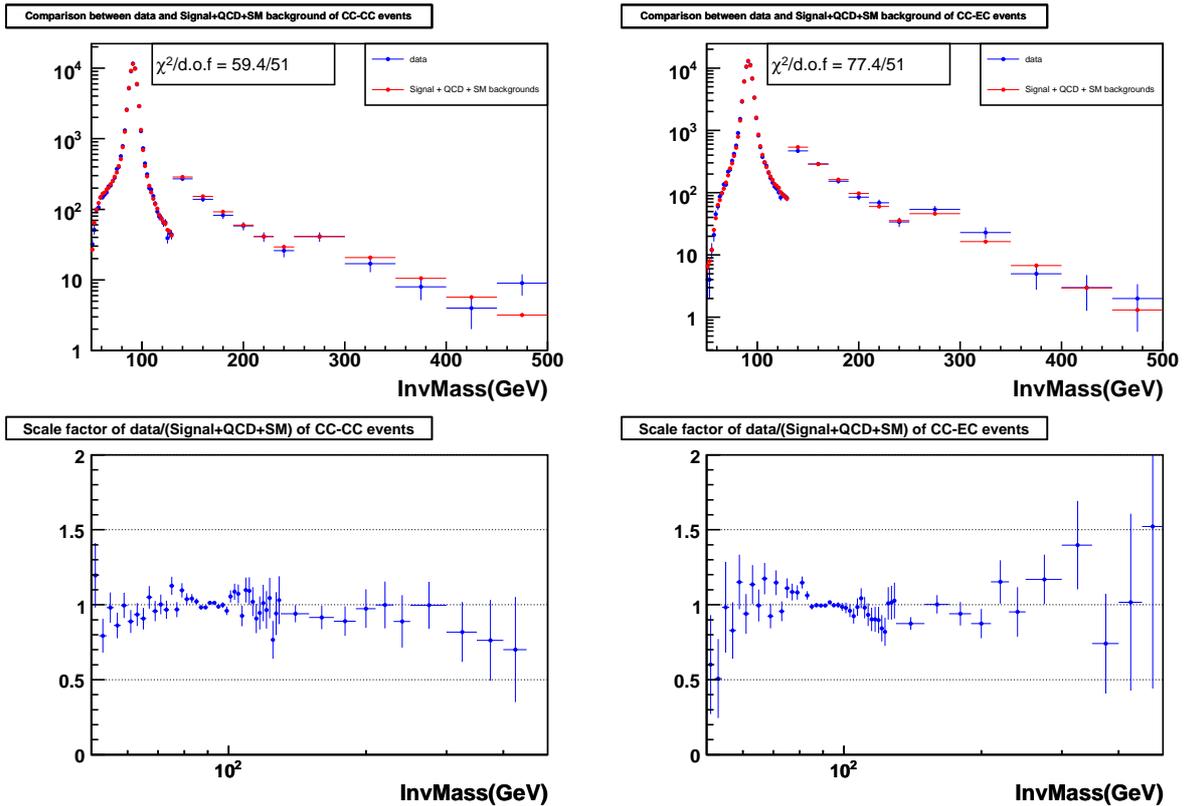


Figure 6.3: Invariant mass comparison for CC-CC and CC-EC events and also the ratio between data and signal + backgrounds. The discontinuity in the mass distribution is due to different bin size. The KS probabilities are 0.9996 and 0.4860 for CC-CC and CC-EC.

## 6.4 Comparison between Data and Signal+QCD+SM backgrounds:

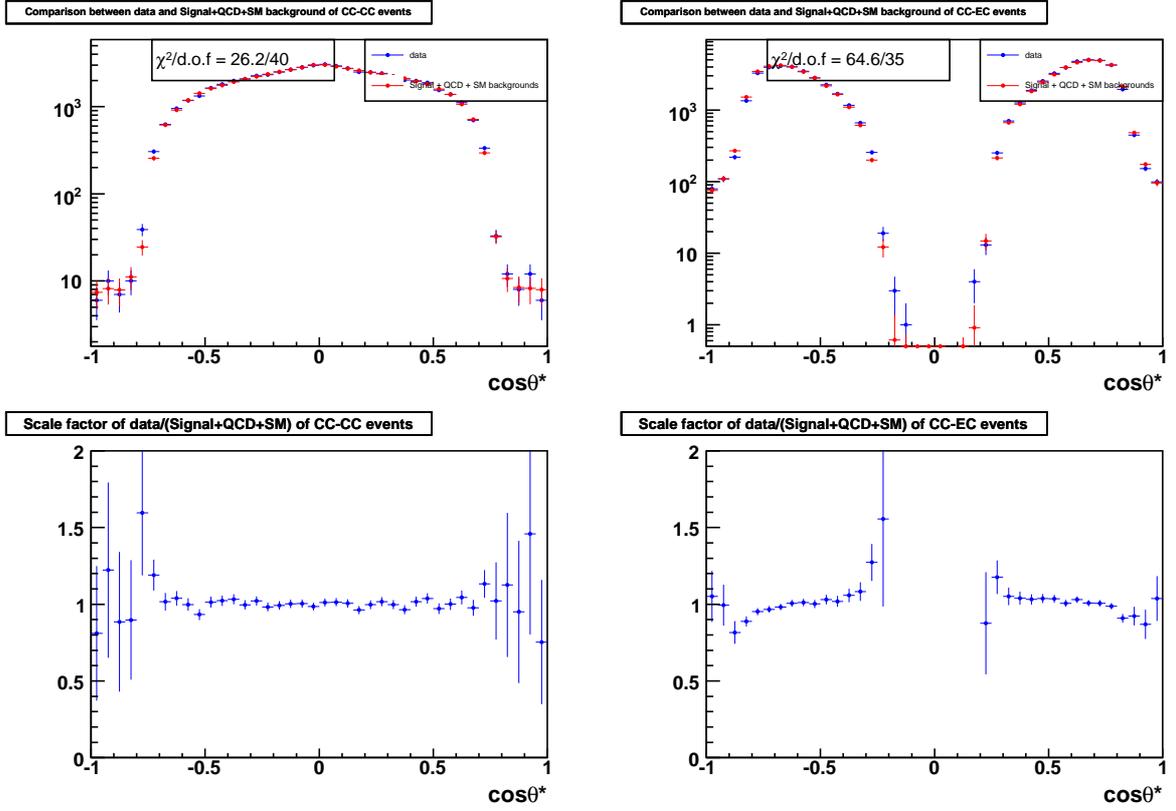


Figure 6.4:  $\cos \theta^*$  distribution for CC-CC and CC-EC events and also the ratio between data and signal + backgrounds. The KS probabilities are 0.995 and 0.026 for CC-CC and CC-EC.

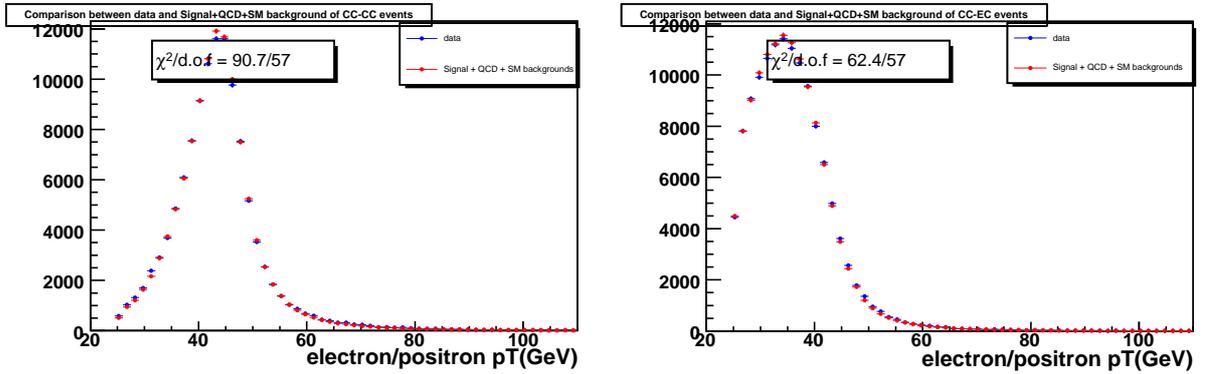


Figure 6.5: Electron/positron  $p_T$  comparison for CC-CC and CC-EC events. The KS probabilities are 0.153 and 0.115 for CC-CC and CC-EC.

## 6. BACKGROUNDS

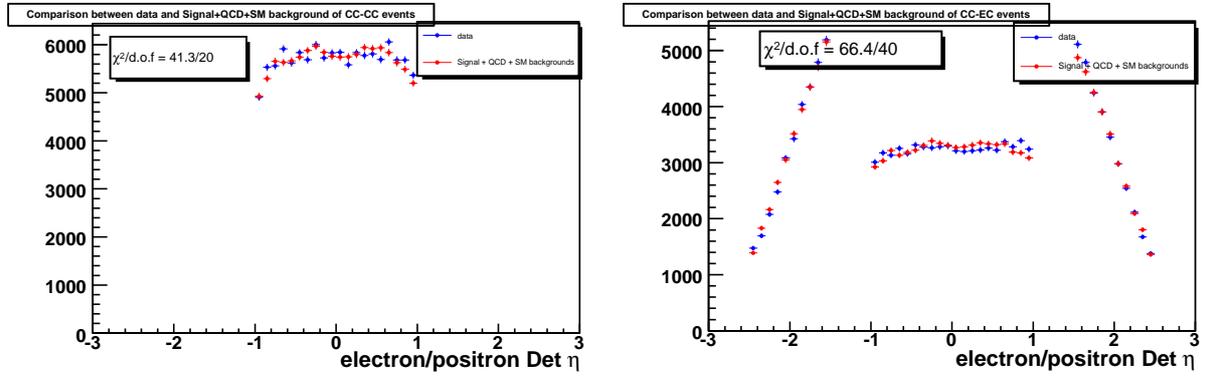


Figure 6.6: Electron/positron detector  $\eta$  comparison for CC-CC and CC-EC events. The KS probabilities are 0.213 and 0.136 for CC-CC and CC-EC.

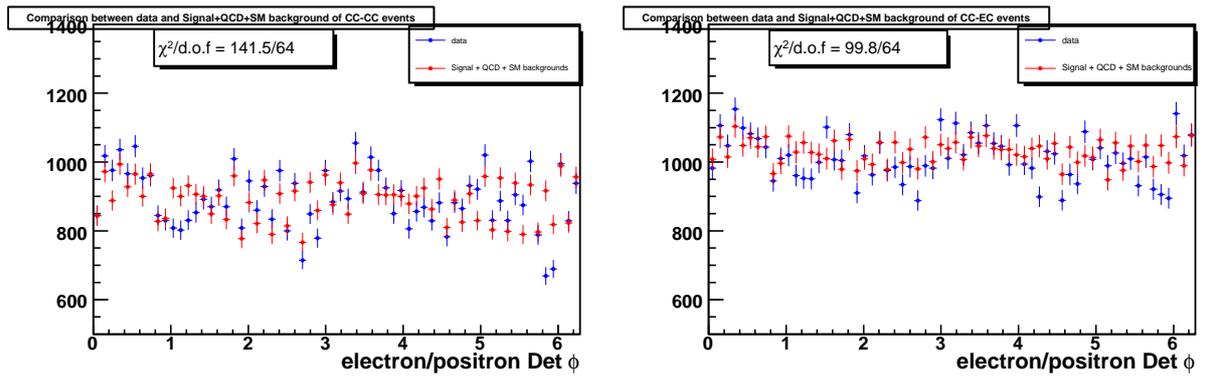


Figure 6.7: Electron/positron detector  $\phi$  comparison for CC-CC and CC-EC events. The KS probabilities are 0.334 and 0.493 for CC-CC and CC-EC.

## 6.4 Comparison between Data and Signal+QCD+SM backgrounds:

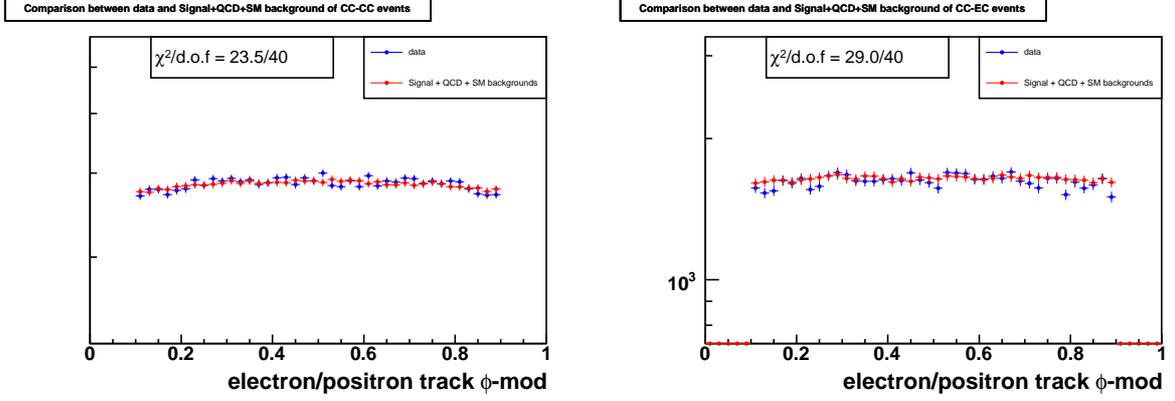


Figure 6.8: CC (no EC electrons included) Electron/positron track PhiMod comparison for CC-CC and CC-EC events. The KS probabilities are 0.981 and 0.314. Since we only cut on the track PhiMod for electrons in CC, we do not care about PhiMod distribution in EC.

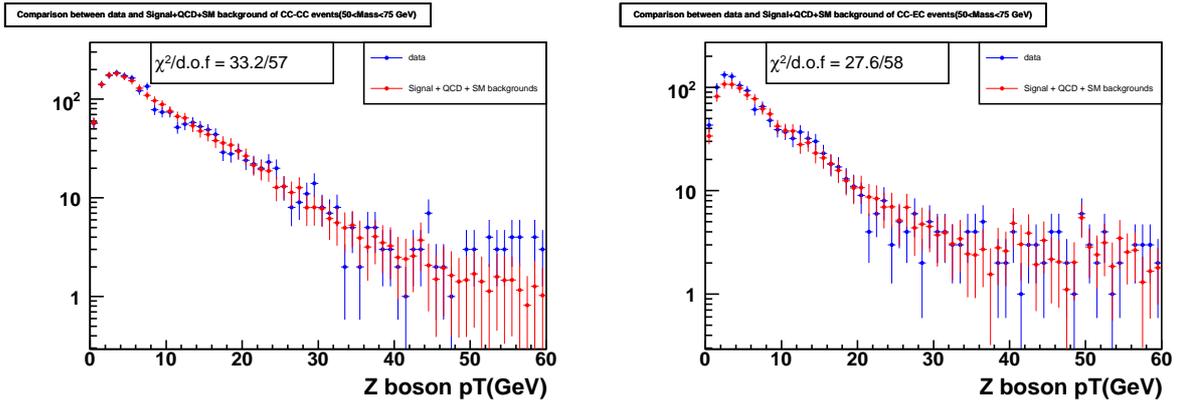


Figure 6.9:  $Z$  boson  $p_T$  comparison for CC-CC and CC-EC events at low mass region(50-75 GeV).

## 6. BACKGROUNDS

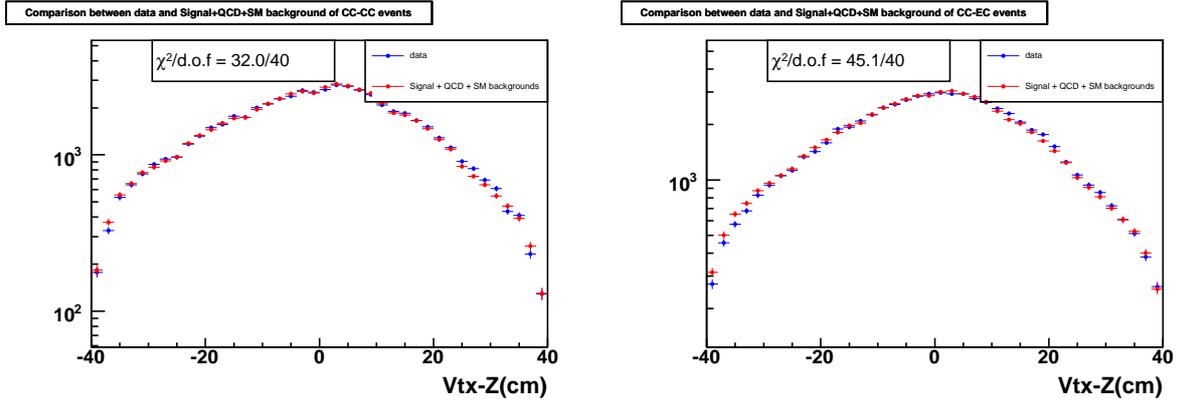


Figure 6.10:  $V_{tx-Z}$  comparison for CC-CC and CC-EC events. The KS function probabilities are 0.479 and 0.069 for CC-CC and CC-EC.

We also compared  $\cos\theta^*$  distribution in three different mass regions where the  $A_{FB}$  is at extreme:  $60 < M < 75$  GeV (most negative),  $75 < M < 105$  GeV (close to 0) and  $105 < M < 500$  GeV (most positive). The comparison plots can be found from Fig. 6.11 to Fig. 6.13. The  $\cos\theta^*$  comparison plots for all 14 mass bins are included in the Appendix B and all  $\chi^2/d.o.f$  are reasonable. Fig. 6.14 shows  $M_{ee}$  and  $\cos\theta^*$  distributions between data and signal+backgrounds.

## 6.4 Comparison between Data and Signal+QCD+SM backgrounds:

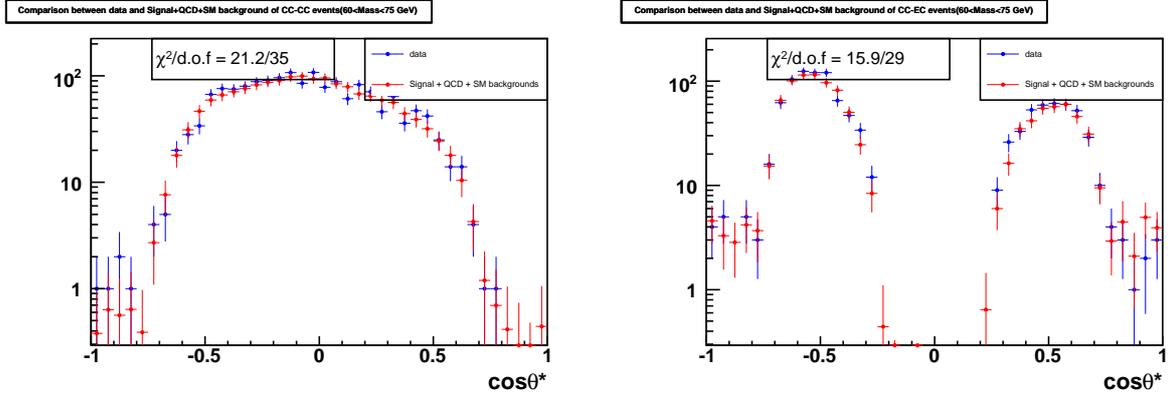


Figure 6.11:  $\cos\theta^*$  comparison for CC-CC and CC-EC events in the low mass region ( $60 < M < 75$  GeV). In this mass region,  $A_{FB}$  is negative, and we observe more backward events ( $\cos\theta^* < 0$ ) than forward events ( $\cos\theta^* > 0$ ). The worse overall  $\chi^2$  for CC-EC events mainly comes from the seventh and eighth bins and also the seventh bin from the last. The KS probabilities are 1. and 0.857 for CC-CC and CC-EC.

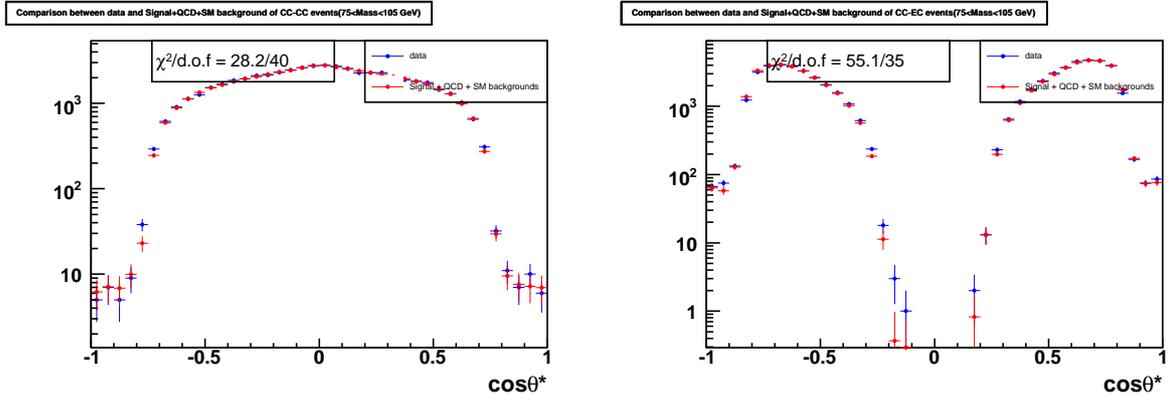


Figure 6.12:  $\cos\theta^*$  comparison for CC-CC and CC-EC events in the middle mass region ( $75 < M < 105$  GeV). In this mass region,  $A_{FB}$  is close to 0, and we observe similar number of backward events ( $\cos\theta^* < 0$ ) and forward events ( $\cos\theta^* > 0$ ). The KS probabilities are 0.959 and 0.046 for CC-CC and CC-EC.

## 6. BACKGROUNDS

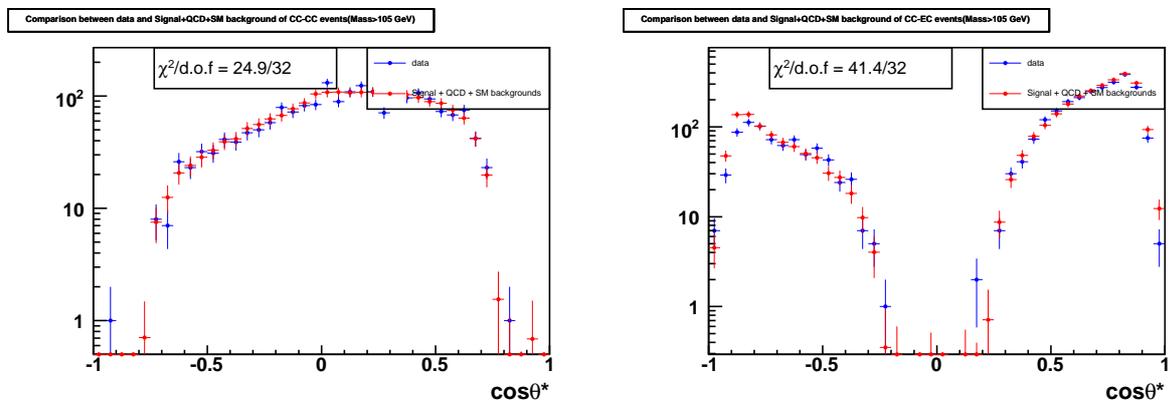


Figure 6.13:  $\cos\theta^*$  comparison for CC-CC and CC-EC events in high mass region ( $105 < M < 500$  GeV). In this mass region,  $A_{FB}$  is positive, and we observe more forward events ( $\cos\theta^* > 0$ ) than backward events ( $\cos\theta^* < 0$ ). The worse overall  $\chi^2$  for CC-EC events mainly comes from the second, third and the last bins. The KS probabilities are 0.931 and 0.474 for CC-CC and CC-EC.

6.4 Comparison between Data and Signal+QCD+SM backgrounds:

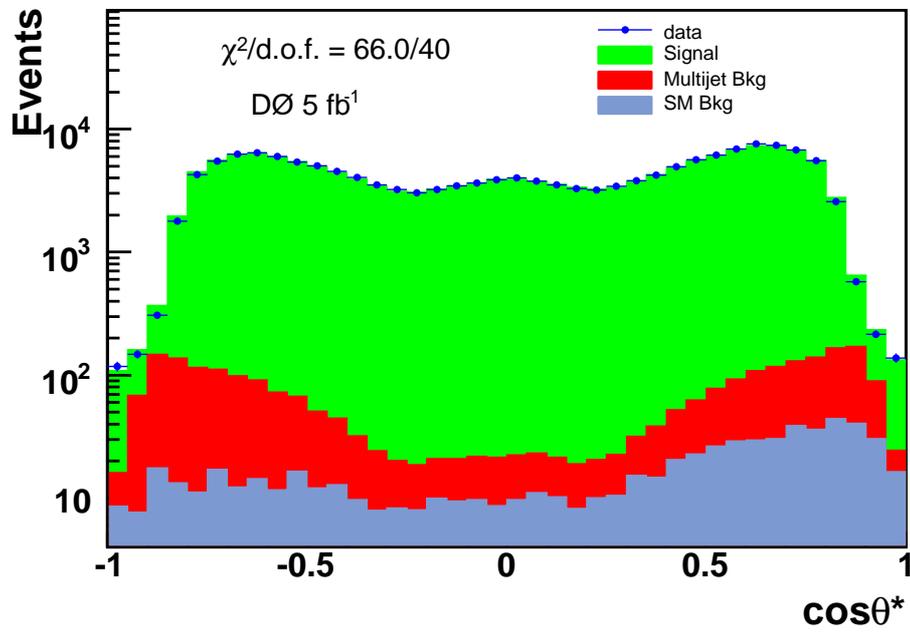
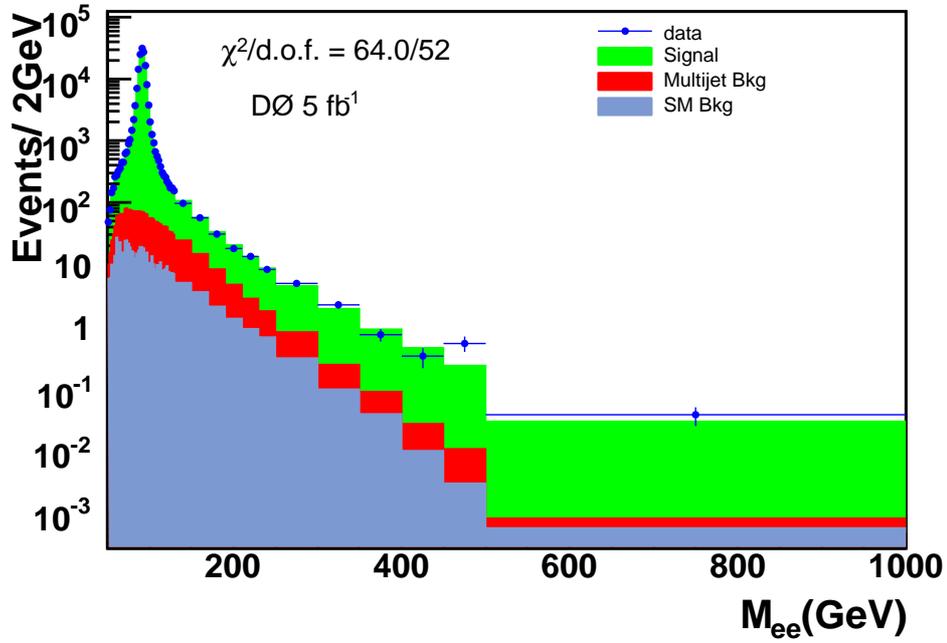


Figure 6.14:  $M_{ee}$  and  $\cos\theta^*$  distributions between data and Signal+backgrounds.

## 6. BACKGROUNDS

---

# Chapter 7

## Unfolding and Closure test

In order to correct the raw forward-backward asymmetry and obtain the generator-level  $A_{FB}$ , this measurement must account for any acceptances and detector effects that can change the number of forward and backward events found in each  $M_{ee}$  bin. The dominant contributions to the detector acceptance are kinematic acceptance, geometric acceptance, and electron selection efficiencies. The major effect that contributes to event migration between  $M_{ee}$  bins is the energy resolution of the detector. The PYTHIA GEANT MC simulation is used to determine the corresponding corrections.

### 7.1 Detector resolution unfolding

We measure  $A_{FB}$  as a function of the dielectron invariant mass ( $M_{ee}$ ) in twelve bins. The measurement is complicated by detector energy resolution and QED radiation which cause the true and measured  $M_{ee}$  and  $\cos\theta^*$  diff. Events in one invariant-mass bin may migrate to another invariant-mass bin. A correction needs to be made in order to unfold the detector effect. We used the matrix method introduced by CDF Run II

## 7. UNFOLDING AND CLOSURE TEST

---

[27]. The method is as follows:

We compute the response matrix  $R_{ij}^{FF}$  for an event that is measured as forward in bin  $i$  to be found as forward and in  $M_{ee}$  bin  $j$  at the generator level. Likewise, we also calculate the response matrices for backward events being found as backward ( $R_{ij}^{BB}$ ), forward as backward ( $R_{ij}^{FB}$ ), and backward as forward ( $R_{ij}^{BF}$ ).  $R^{FB}$  and  $R^{BF}$  approximately represent the event bin migration, and these off-diagonal elements are much smaller than the diagonal elements due to the bin width we chose. These four matrices are:

$$R_{ij}^{FF} = \frac{N_j^F(\text{generator})}{N_i^F(\text{measured})}; \quad R_{ij}^{FB} = \frac{N_j^F(\text{generator})}{N_i^B(\text{measured})} \quad (7.1)$$

$$R_{ij}^{BF} = \frac{N_j^B(\text{generator})}{N_i^F(\text{measured})}; \quad R_{ij}^{BB} = \frac{N_j^B(\text{generator})}{N_i^B(\text{measured})} \quad (7.2)$$

where  $N_i^F(\text{generator})$  [ $N_i^B(\text{generator})$ ] is the number of forward [backward] events generated in the  $i$ -th  $M_{ee}$  bin, an  $N_j^F(\text{measured})$  [ $N_j^B(\text{measured})$ ] is the number of forward [backward] events measured in the  $j$ -th  $M_{ee}$  bin.

As a result, the number of generator level events in each mass bin can be calculated using the number of measured events in each mass bin and the response matrix:

$$N_i^F(\text{generator}) = \sum [R_{ij}^{FF} \cdot N_j^F(\text{measured}) + R_{ij}^{FB} \cdot N_j^B(\text{measured})] \quad (7.3)$$

$$N_i^B(\text{generator}) = \sum [R_{ij}^{BB} \cdot N_j^B(\text{measured}) + R_{ij}^{BF} \cdot N_j^F(\text{measured})] \quad (7.4)$$

We first tune GEANT MC so that the detector resolution in MC agrees with what we measured from the real data, then the response matrix is derived from the tuned

## 7.1 Detector resolution unfolding

GEANT MC and used to get number of expected events in each mass bin with kinematic and geometric acceptance applied. The response matrix is shown in Fig. 7.1 for CC-CC events and Fig. 7.2 for CC-EC events. As expected,  $R_{ij}^{FF}$  and  $R_{ij}^{BB}$  are mostly diagonalized.

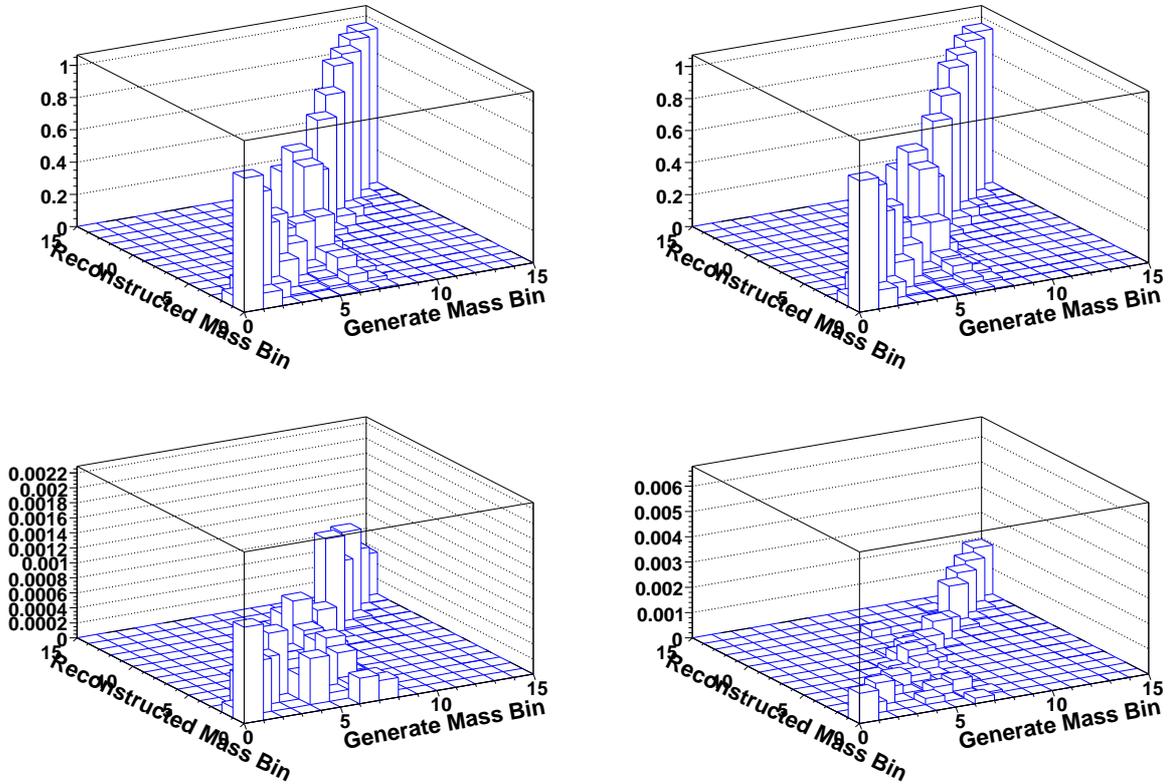


Figure 7.1: Response matrix for CC-CC events. The axes are labeled by the  $M_{ee}$  bin number where bin 1 is the lowest mass bin and bin 12 is the highest mass bin. The four plots are for  $R_{ij}^{FF}$ ,  $R_{ij}^{BB}$ ,  $R_{ij}^{BF}$  and  $R_{ij}^{FB}$  respectively. The definition of each response matrix element can be found in the text.

## 7. UNFOLDING AND CLOSURE TEST

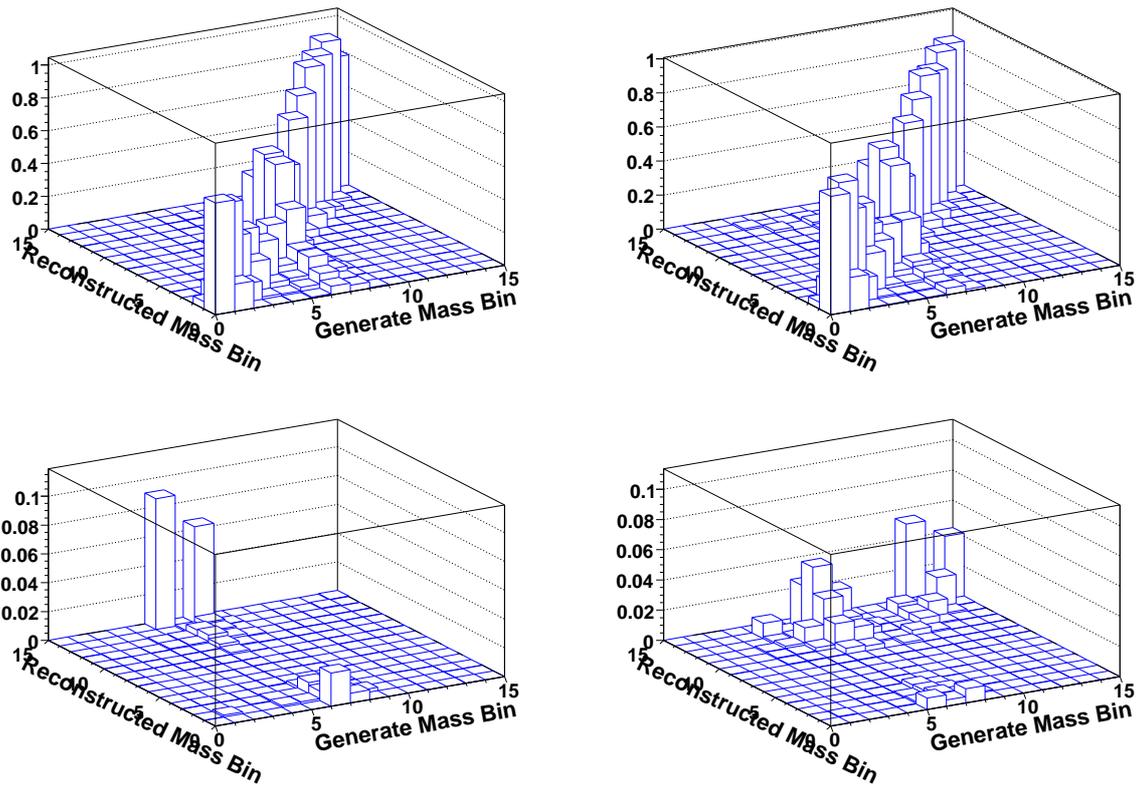


Figure 7.2: Response matrix for CC-EC events. The axes are labeled by the  $M_{ee}$  bin number where bin 1 is the lowest mass bin and bin 12 is the highest mass bin. The four plots are for  $R_{ij}^{FF}$ ,  $R_{ij}^{BB}$ ,  $R_{ij}^{BF}$  and  $R_{ij}^{FB}$  respectively. The definition of each response matrix element can be found in the text.

## 7.2 Acceptance and efficiencies corrections

Since we applied many electron criteria to select  $Z/\gamma^*$  candidates, these selection criteria can change the number of forward and backward events found in each  $M_{ee}$  bin. Although there is very little in the detector and analysis that treats forward and backward events differently, the angular distribution of the events and photon radiation can change event acceptances and the reconstructed invariant mass so that net differences arise for forward and backward events. As described in Sect.5.2 and Sect.6.4, the PYTHIA GEANT MC are tuned to agree with data, scale factors for different efficiencies are applied in GEANT MC, and also the prediction of the peak and width of  $Z$  candidates agrees with real data measurement. We can use PYTHIA GEANT MC to derive acceptance corrections. The dominant contributions to the detector acceptances are kinematic acceptance, geometric acceptance and electron identification efficiency. The following sections use PYTHIA generator level events to understand the various effects on the final  $A_{FB}$  measurement.

### 7.2.1 Kinematic and geometric effects

Fig. 7.3 shows the effect of kinematic and geometric cuts on  $\cos\theta^*$  distributions based on PYTHIA generator-level information.

More useful information can be found in Fig. 7.4 and Fig. 7.5, where we compare the  $A_{FB}$  distributions with different cuts applied at the generator level. The kinematic and geometric cuts are not very sensitive to the  $A_{FB}$  distribution around  $Z$  peak region.

## 7. UNFOLDING AND CLOSURE TEST

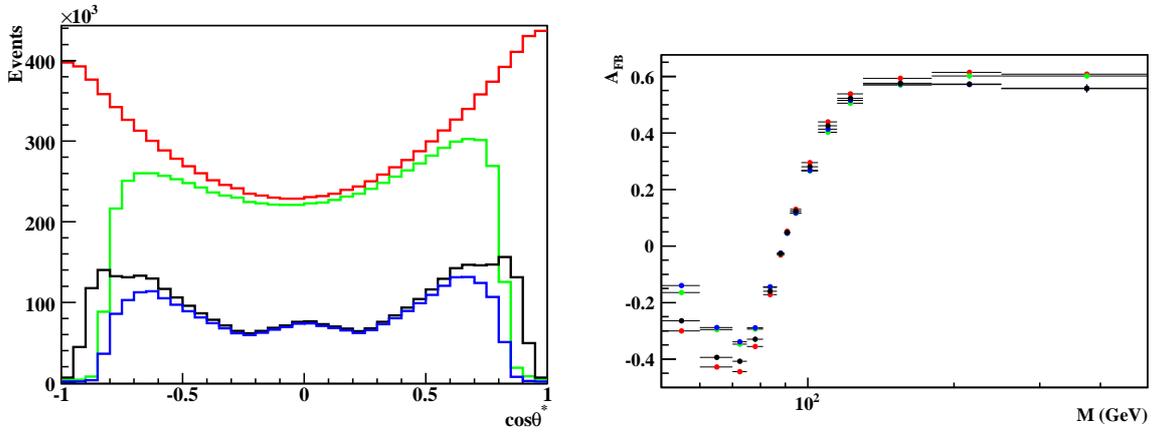


Figure 7.3: Effects of kinematic and geometric cuts on  $\cos\theta^*$  (Left) and  $A_{FB}$  (Right) distributions using PYTHIA generator-level information ( $50 < M < 500$  GeV). The red curve is without any cuts, the green curve is with  $p_T > 25$  GeV requirement on both electron and positron, the black curve is with physics  $\eta$  requirements ( $|\eta| < 1$  (PhiMod cut also applied) or  $1.5 < |\eta| < 2.5$ , no EC-EC events) on both electron and positron, and the blue curve is with both  $p_T$  and acceptance cuts applied.

## 7.2 Acceptance and efficiencies corrections

The kinematic cut ( $p_T > 25$  GeV), is relatively insensitive to  $A_{FB}$  in the high-mass region and pretty sensitive in the low-mass region. For the geometric cut, it is sensitive to  $A_{FB}$  in both the high- and low-mass regions.

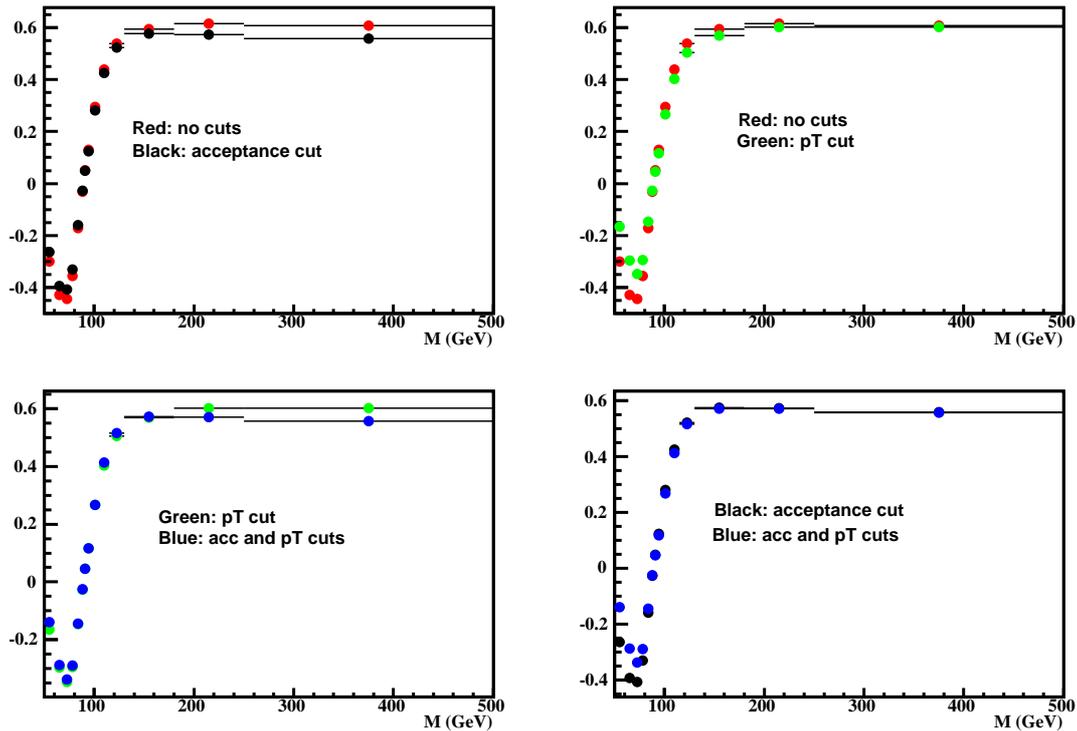


Figure 7.4: Effects of kinematic and geometric cuts on and  $A_{FB}$  distribution using PYTHIA generator-level information. The red curve is without any cuts, the green curve is with  $p_T > 25$  GeV requirement on both electron and positron, the black curve is with physics  $\eta$  requirements ( $|\eta| < 1$  (PhiMod cut also applied) or  $1.5 < |\eta| < 2.5$ , no EC-EC events) on both electron and positron, and the blue curve is with both  $p_T$  and acceptance cuts applied.

## 7. UNFOLDING AND CLOSURE TEST

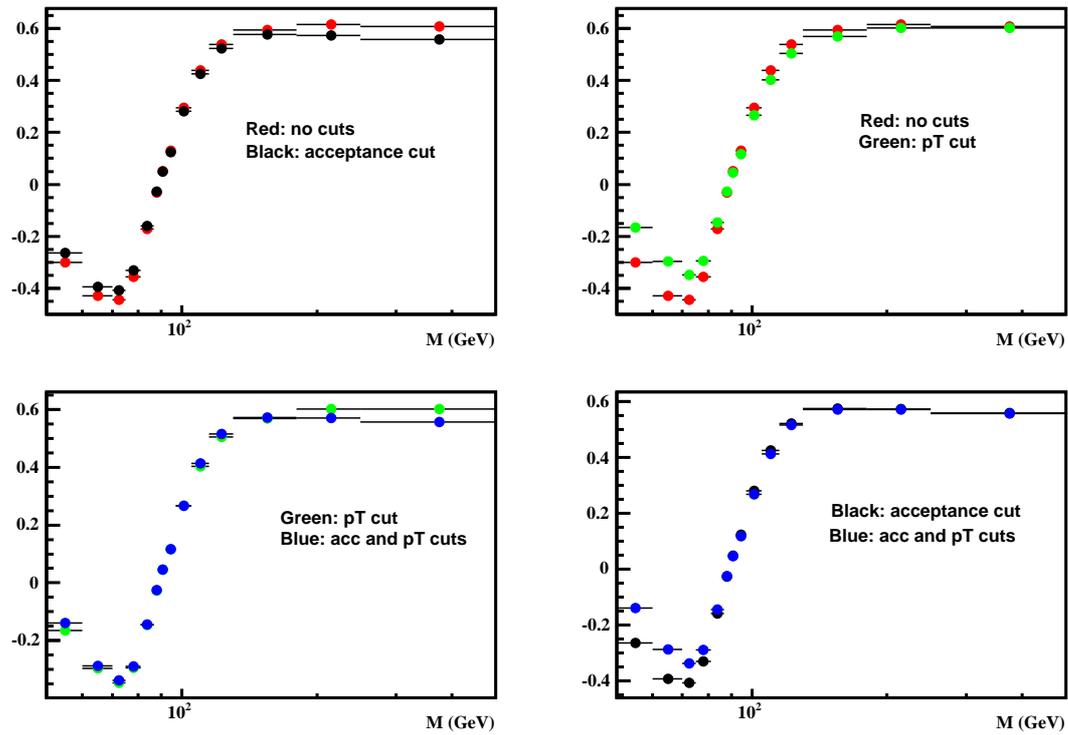


Figure 7.5: Effects of kinematic and geometric cuts on and  $A_{FB}$  distribution using PYTHIA generator-level information. Same information as Fig. 7.4 except the  $x$ -axis is plotted at log scale.

### 7.2.2 QED final state radiation effects

The invariant mass of the dielectron pair can be mis-measured due to final state QED radiation or external bremsstrahlung. If we ignore the radiated photon, the effect is significant for the mass region below  $Z$  peak, as shown on the left plot of Fig. 7.6 where we plot  $A_{FB}$  vs invariant mass for PYTHIA events without and with electron-photon merging. Fortunately, most of these photons are emitted co-linearly with the electron and are reconstructed as one single EM object by the DØ detector, which makes the measured  $A_{FB}$  less sensitive to the FSR effect. The right plot of Fig. 7.6 shows  $A_{FB}$  distributions with electron-photon merging cone size  $R = 0.2$  and  $R = 0.3$ . Since the  $A_{FB}$  is measured as a function of the propagator  $Z/\gamma^*$  mass, the effect is expected to be very small.

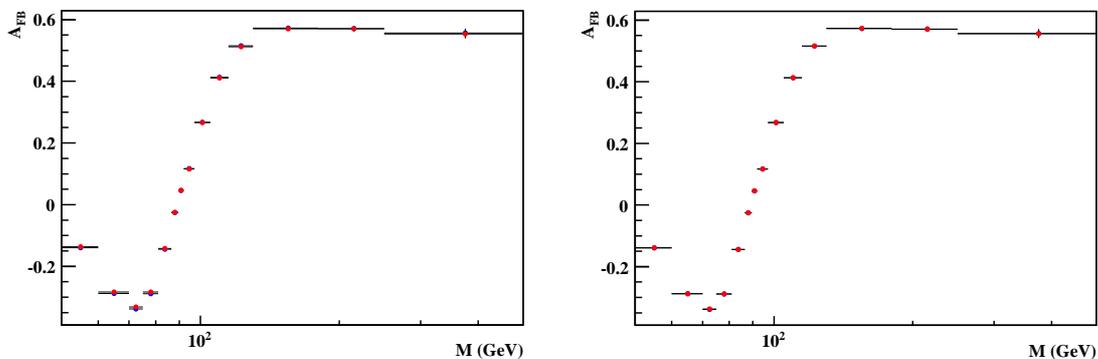


Figure 7.6: Effects of electron-photon merging cone size on  $A_{FB}$  using PYTHIA generator-level information. The kinematic and geometric cuts described before already applied for all histograms. For the left plot, we compare the  $A_{FB}$  with electron-photon merging cone size  $R = 0.3$  (Blue curve) and without electron-photon merging (Red curve). For the right plot, we compare the  $A_{FB}$  with electron-photon merging cone size  $R = 0.3$  (Blue curve) and with electron-photon merging cone size  $R = 0.2$  (Red curve).

### 7.2.3 Final acceptance $\times$ efficiencies

The final acceptance  $\times$  efficiencies for CC-CC and CC-EC are measured by applying the same selection cuts on GEANT MC events, Fig. 7.7 shows the acceptance  $\times$  efficiencies for forward and backward events as a function of the generator-level  $Z/\gamma^*$  mass. The numbers for all mass bins are shown in Table. 7.1 for CC-CC and CC-EC events separately. Table. 7.2 lists the overall acceptance  $\times$  efficiencies for both CC-CC and CC-EC events.

Since all selection efficiency are all close to 1, the overall acceptance  $\times$  efficiencies is mainly caused by the kinematic and geometric acceptance. At high mass,  $Z$  boson tends to be produced with small rapidity, and thus the overall acceptance increases for CC-CC events and decreases for CC-EC events.

## 7.3 Charge mis-identification

### 7.3.1 Effect of charge mis-identification

Charge measurement is important for this analysis since we rely on the track charge to determine electron and positron, and then use their four vectors to calculate  $\cos\theta^*$  to determine forward or backward event.

Assuming the charge mis-identification rate is  $f_Q$ ; for CC-CC event, we require the two EM clusters must have opposite charge, and thus have very low probability

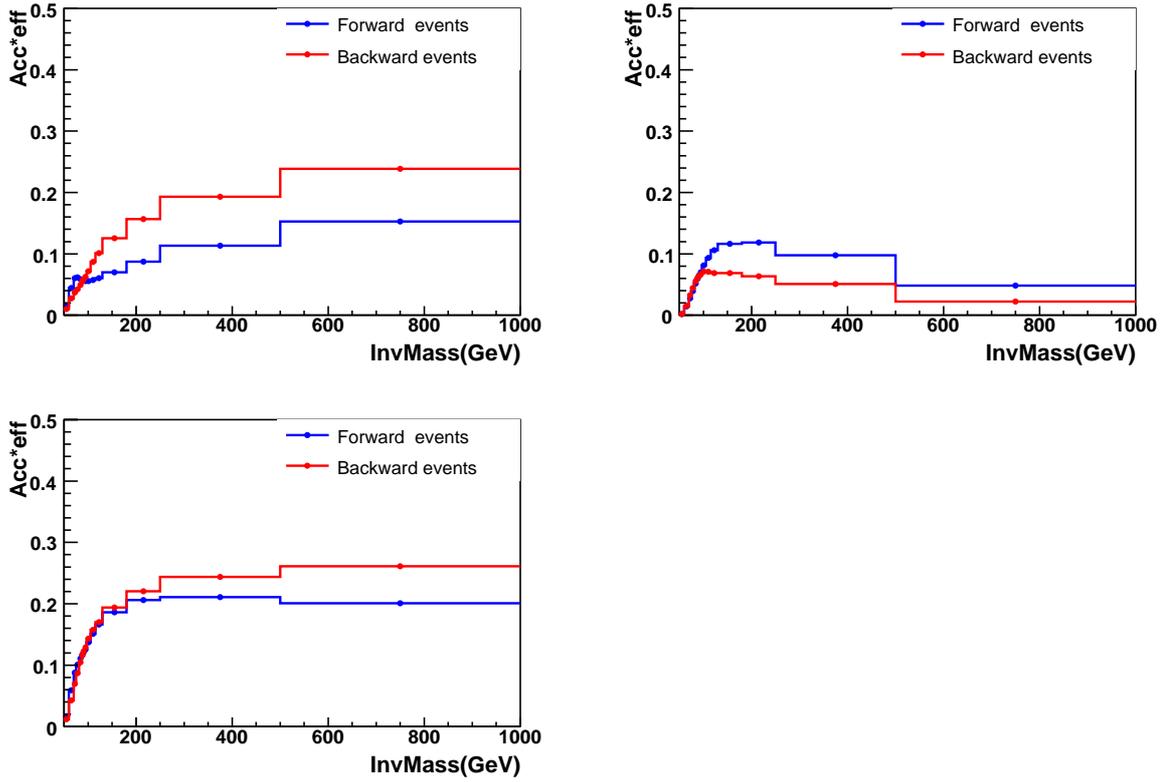


Figure 7.7: Acceptances $\times$ efficiencies for CC-CC (top left) and CC-EC (top right) and both (bottom left) events. For acceptances $\times$ efficiencies calculation, the denominator is the total number of generated  $Z/\gamma^* \rightarrow ee$  events and the numerator is the number of events passed the offline selections.

## 7. UNFOLDING AND CLOSURE TEST

Mass Range (GeV)	CC-CC		CC-EC	
	Forward	Backward	Forward	Backward
$50.0 < M_{ee} < 60.0$	$0.015 \pm 0.000$	$0.010 \pm 0.000$	$0.002 \pm 0.000$	$0.002 \pm 0.000$
$60.0 < M_{ee} < 70.0$	$0.044 \pm 0.001$	$0.027 \pm 0.000$	$0.015 \pm 0.000$	$0.015 \pm 0.000$
$70.0 < M_{ee} < 75.0$	$0.060 \pm 0.001$	$0.037 \pm 0.000$	$0.027 \pm 0.001$	$0.033 \pm 0.000$
$75.0 < M_{ee} < 81.0$	$0.062 \pm 0.001$	$0.042 \pm 0.000$	$0.039 \pm 0.001$	$0.044 \pm 0.000$
$81.0 < M_{ee} < 86.5$	$0.059 \pm 0.000$	$0.049 \pm 0.000$	$0.052 \pm 0.000$	$0.056 \pm 0.000$
$86.5 < M_{ee} < 89.5$	$0.057 \pm 0.000$	$0.055 \pm 0.000$	$0.060 \pm 0.000$	$0.061 \pm 0.000$
$89.5 < M_{ee} < 92.0$	$0.056 \pm 0.000$	$0.059 \pm 0.000$	$0.065 \pm 0.000$	$0.064 \pm 0.000$
$92.0 < M_{ee} < 97.0$	$0.056 \pm 0.000$	$0.062 \pm 0.000$	$0.070 \pm 0.000$	$0.066 \pm 0.000$
$97.0 < M_{ee} < 105.0$	$0.056 \pm 0.000$	$0.072 \pm 0.001$	$0.081 \pm 0.000$	$0.071 \pm 0.001$
$105.0 < M_{ee} < 115.0$	$0.058 \pm 0.001$	$0.087 \pm 0.001$	$0.094 \pm 0.001$	$0.071 \pm 0.001$
$115.0 < M_{ee} < 130.0$	$0.060 \pm 0.001$	$0.101 \pm 0.002$	$0.106 \pm 0.001$	$0.069 \pm 0.001$
$130.0 < M_{ee} < 180.0$	$0.070 \pm 0.000$	$0.125 \pm 0.000$	$0.116 \pm 0.000$	$0.068 \pm 0.000$
$180.0 < M_{ee} < 250.0$	$0.087 \pm 0.000$	$0.157 \pm 0.001$	$0.119 \pm 0.000$	$0.064 \pm 0.001$
$250.0 < M_{ee} < 500.0$	$0.113 \pm 0.000$	$0.193 \pm 0.000$	$0.098 \pm 0.000$	$0.051 \pm 0.000$
$500 < M_{ee} < 1000$	$0.153 \pm 0.000$	$0.239 \pm 0.001$	$0.048 \pm 0.000$	$0.022 \pm 0.000$

Table 7.1: Acceptance  $\times$  efficiencies of forward and backward events in different mass bins for CC-CC and CC-EC respectively.

to identify forward (backward) event as backward (forward) event. While for CC-EC events, we only require the CC electron has a track match, and just use the charge of this track to determine forward or backward for the whole event, the mis-identification

### 7.3 Charge mis-identification

Mass Range (GeV)	CC-CC and CC-EC	
	Forward	Backward
$50.0 < M_{ee} < 60.0$	$0.016 \pm 0.000$	$0.012 \pm 0.000$
$60.0 < M_{ee} < 70.0$	$0.059 \pm 0.001$	$0.043 \pm 0.000$
$70.0 < M_{ee} < 75.0$	$0.088 \pm 0.001$	$0.070 \pm 0.001$
$75.0 < M_{ee} < 81.0$	$0.101 \pm 0.001$	$0.087 \pm 0.001$
$81.0 < M_{ee} < 86.5$	$0.111 \pm 0.001$	$0.105 \pm 0.000$
$86.5 < M_{ee} < 89.5$	$0.117 \pm 0.000$	$0.116 \pm 0.000$
$89.5 < M_{ee} < 92.0$	$0.121 \pm 0.000$	$0.122 \pm 0.000$
$92.0 < M_{ee} < 97.0$	$0.126 \pm 0.000$	$0.129 \pm 0.000$
$97.0 < M_{ee} < 105.0$	$0.137 \pm 0.001$	$0.143 \pm 0.001$
$105.0 < M_{ee} < 115.0$	$0.151 \pm 0.001$	$0.158 \pm 0.001$
$115.0 < M_{ee} < 130.0$	$0.166 \pm 0.001$	$0.170 \pm 0.002$
$130.0 < M_{ee} < 180.0$	$0.186 \pm 0.000$	$0.194 \pm 0.001$
$180.0 < M_{ee} < 250.0$	$0.206 \pm 0.001$	$0.220 \pm 0.001$
$250.0 < M_{ee} < 500.0$	$0.210 \pm 0.000$	$0.244 \pm 0.000$
$500 < M_{ee} < 1000$	$0.201 \pm 0.001$	$0.261 \pm 0.001$

Table 7.2: Acceptance  $\times$  efficiencies of forward and backward events in different mass bins for both CC-CC and CC-EC events.

probability is thus higher.

$$A^{true} = \frac{N_{true}^F - N_{true}^B}{N_{true}^F + N_{true}^B}, \quad A^{meas} = \frac{N_{meas}^F - N_{meas}^B}{N_{meas}^F + N_{meas}^B} \quad (7.5)$$

## 7. UNFOLDING AND CLOSURE TEST

---

For CC-CC events, we have:

$$\begin{aligned}
A^{meas} &= \frac{N_{meas}^F - N_{meas}^B}{N_{meas}^F + N_{meas}^B} \\
&= \frac{[(1 - f_Q)^2 N_{true}^F + f_Q^2 N_{true}^B] - [(1 - f_Q)^2 N_{true}^B + f_Q^2 N_{true}^F]}{[(1 - f_Q)^2 N_{true}^F + f_Q^2 N_{true}^B] + [(1 - f_Q)^2 N_{true}^B + f_Q^2 N_{true}^F]} \\
&= \frac{(1 - 2f_Q)}{(1 - 2f_Q + 2f_Q^2)} A^{true}
\end{aligned}$$

For CC-EC events, we have:

$$\begin{aligned}
A^{meas} &= \frac{N_{meas}^F - N_{meas}^B}{N_{meas}^F + N_{meas}^B} \\
&= \frac{[N_{true}^F + f_Q N_{true}^B - f_Q N_{true}^F] - [N_{true}^B - f_Q N_{true}^B + f_Q N_{true}^F]}{[N_{true}^F + f_Q N_{true}^B - f_Q N_{true}^F] + [N_{true}^B - f_Q N_{true}^B + f_Q N_{true}^F]} \\
&= (1 - 2f_Q) A^{true}
\end{aligned}$$

As shown in the above equations, if  $f_Q = 50\%$ , which means a track has equal probability to be identified as positive or negative, we can not measure the charge asymmetry since  $1 - 2f_Q = 1 - 2 \times 50\% = 0$ .

After we subtract backgrounds and apply all acceptance and resolution corrections, we can get the corrected  $A_{FB}$ , which will then be related to the true  $A_{FB}$  by the dilution factor  $\mathcal{D}$ :

$$A_{FB}^{true} = A_{FB}^{meas} / \mathcal{D} \quad (7.6)$$

where  $\mathcal{D} = (1 - 2f_Q) / (1 - 2f_Q + 2f_Q^2)$  for CC-CC events and  $\mathcal{D} = 1 - 2f_Q$  for CC-EC events.

### 7.3.2 Determination of Charge mis-identification

The charge mis-identification rate is measured by using the same selection cuts as is used for the signal CC-CC events, except that no opposite charge required. The charge

### 7.3 Charge mis-identification

misID rate is given by

$$f_Q = \frac{1}{2} \frac{N_{SS}}{N_{OS} + N_{SS}} \quad (7.7)$$

where  $N_{SS}$  is the total number of same-sign events and  $N_{OS}$  is the total number of opposite-sign events in the  $Z$ -peak region. The  $Z$  mass distributions for the same-sign and opposite-sign  $Z$  events are shown in Fig. 7.8. We also use the tag-probe method as a consistency check by requiring very tight cuts on the tag electron to make sure the charge is determined correctly, and then measure the fake rate by looking at the charge of the probe electron. The results from the two methods agree with each other.

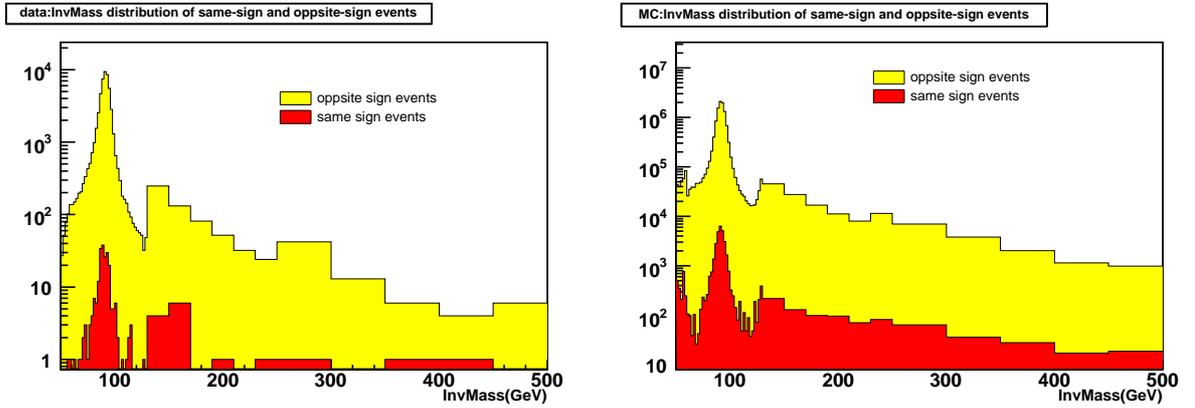


Figure 7.8: Invariant mass distributions for same-sign and opposite-sign events in data (left) and GEANT MC (right).

The same method is applied for real data and GEANT MC events. The average charge misID rate for CC electrons is found to be  $\langle f_Q \rangle = (0.23 \pm 0.03)\%$  for real data and  $\langle f_Q \rangle = (0.06 \pm 0.006)\%$  for GEANT MC events. The charge misID is roughly a factor of 3 worse in data than in GEANT MC. The main reasons for the data-GEANT MC difference can be less amount of materials for the tracking system in GEANT simulation, and the non-perfect alignment of the real detector. The charge misID rate as a function of invariant mass is also shown in Fig. 7.9 for both data and GEANT MC.

## 7. UNFOLDING AND CLOSURE TEST

At higher energies, the tracks become almost straight and the charge determination has a higher probability of being wrong. More detailed information about charge misID rate can be found in [48]. The error is calculated using Bayesian uncertainties.

In real data, due to the limited statistics, we did not observe any same-sign events with  $M > 250$  GeV, but it does not really mean the charge misID rate is zero for  $M > 250$  GeV. We use GEANT MC events to model the charge misID rate for high-mass region, the charge misID rate in GEANT MC is rescaled to match with the misID rate in data at  $Z$ -pole. The comparison for the charge misID rate between data and the rescaled GEANT MC can be found in Fig. 7.10 (left) for the whole mass region and Fig. 7.10 (right) for the region  $50 < M < 130$  GeV, good agreement for the charge misID rate between the data and the rescaled GEANT MC are observed for each bin.

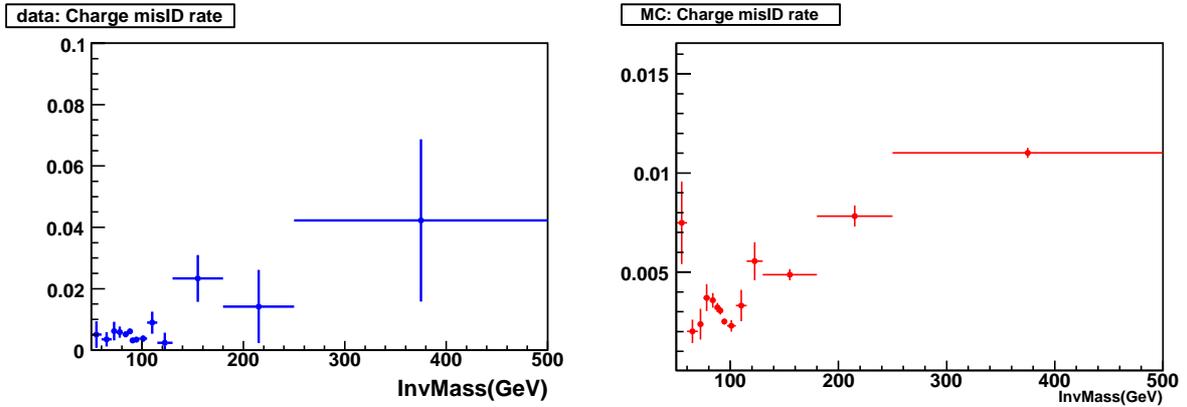


Figure 7.9: Data (blue) and GEANT MC (red) charge misID rate as a function of invariant mass.

For the final charge misID rate, we use the central values from the rescaled GEANT MC samples and the uncertainties from real data. These values are listed in Table 7.3 together with the dilution factor  $\mathcal{D}$  for CC-CC and CC-EC. For CC-CC region, the effect is pretty small and almost no correction is needed. For CC-EC region, the effect

## 7.4 Unfolding procedure and Closure test

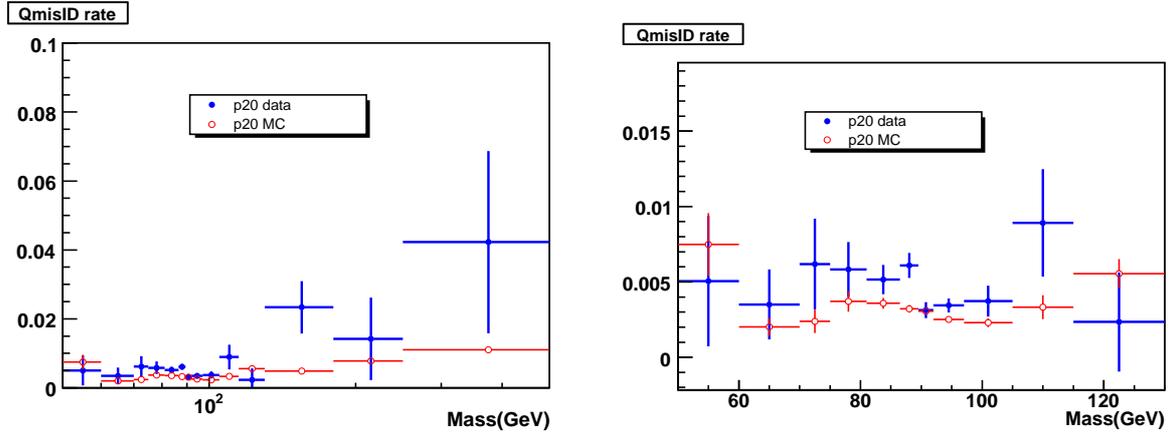


Figure 7.10: Data (blue) and GEANT MC (red) charge misID rate as a function of invariant mass. The charge misID rate in GEANT MC is rescaled to match with data at  $Z$ -pole. The left plot is for the whole mass region and the right plot is for  $50 < M < 130$  GeV.

is also pretty small ( $< 1\%$  for the first twelve bins) except  $1.2\%$  for  $180 < M < 250$  GeV and  $2.3\%$  for  $250 < M < 500$  GeV.

## 7.4 Unfolding procedure and Closure test

Before we apply the detector resolution, acceptance  $\times$  efficiency unfolding and charge misID rate on real data, we apply the same techniques on the GEANT MC simulation. We then compare the unfolded  $A_{FB}$  with the truth  $A_{FB}$  distribution from PYTHIA to make sure that we can get back the input  $A_{FB}$  distribution. We did three GEANT MC closure tests as described below.

### 7.4.1 First closure test on the unfolding method

We used the GEANT MC samples as described in Chapter 4, apply the selection cuts and get the raw  $A_{FB}$  and derive all corrections. Then we compare the unfolded  $A_{FB}$

## 7. UNFOLDING AND CLOSURE TEST

---

Mass Range (GeV)	$f_Q$	$\mathcal{D}$ for CC-CC	$\mathcal{D}$ for CC-EC
$50.0 < M_{ee} < 60.0$	$0.0075 \pm 0.0043$	0.999888	0.985021
$60.0 < M_{ee} < 72.0$	$0.0020 \pm 0.0023$	0.999992	0.995978
$72.0 < M_{ee} < 75.0$	$0.0024 \pm 0.0030$	0.999989	0.995240
$75.0 < M_{ee} < 81.0$	$0.0037 \pm 0.0018$	0.999972	0.992581
$81.0 < M_{ee} < 86.5$	$0.0036 \pm 0.0010$	0.999974	0.992844
$86.5 < M_{ee} < 89.5$	$0.0032 \pm 0.0008$	0.999979	0.993573
$89.5 < M_{ee} < 92.0$	$0.0031 \pm 0.0005$	0.999981	0.993891
$92.0 < M_{ee} < 97.0$	$0.0025 \pm 0.0005$	0.999987	0.994972
$97.0 < M_{ee} < 105.0$	$0.0023 \pm 0.0010$	0.999990	0.995419
$105.0 < M_{ee} < 115.0$	$0.0033 \pm 0.0036$	0.999978	0.993363
$115.0 < M_{ee} < 130.0$	$0.0056 \pm 0.0033$	0.999938	0.988899
$130.0 < M_{ee} < 180.0$	$0.0049 \pm 0.0076$	0.999953	0.990269
$180.0 < M_{ee} < 250.0$	$0.0078 \pm 0.0119$	0.999877	0.984341
$250.0 < M_{ee} < 500.0$	$0.0110 \pm 0.0265$	0.999757	0.977974
$500.0 < M_{ee} < 1000$	$0.0318 \pm 0.0905$	0.99785	0.936471

Table 7.3: Charge misID rate used for final analysis and also the dilution factor for CC-CC and CC-EC.

distribution with the truth distribution.

### 7.4.1.1 Applying detector resolution unfolding

The comparison between the raw  $A_{FB}$  after applying event selection,  $A_{FB}$  after applying detector resolution unfolding and the truth  $A_{FB}$  can be found in Fig. 7.11.

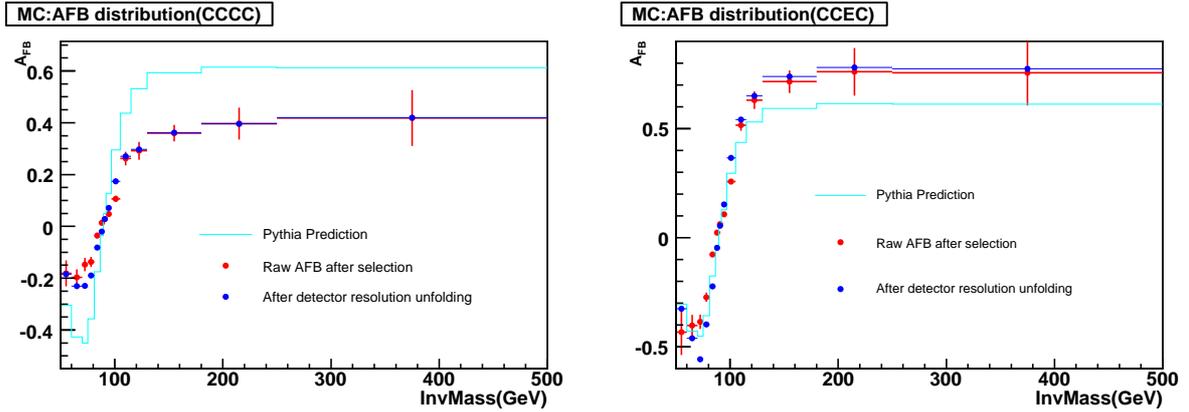


Figure 7.11: Applying detector resolution unfolding on Geant MC sample, for CC-CC and CC-EC events.

### 7.4.1.2 Applying detector resolution and $\text{acc} \times \text{eff}$ unfolding

The comparison between  $A_{FB}$  after applying detector resolution unfolding,  $A_{FB}$  after applying detector resolution and  $\text{acc} \times \text{eff}$  unfolding, and the truth  $A_{FB}$  can be found in Fig. 7.12.

### 7.4.1.3 Applying detector resolution, $\text{acc} \times \text{eff}$ and charge mis-ID rate

The charge mis-identification rate is very small in GEANT MC, and the charge misID correction has negligible effect on the final  $A_{FB}$  distribution. Fig. 7.13 shows the differences between the truth  $A_{FB}$  and  $A_{FB}$  after detector resolution and  $\text{acc} \times \text{eff}$  unfolding, and also charge mis-identification rate corrections.

## 7. UNFOLDING AND CLOSURE TEST

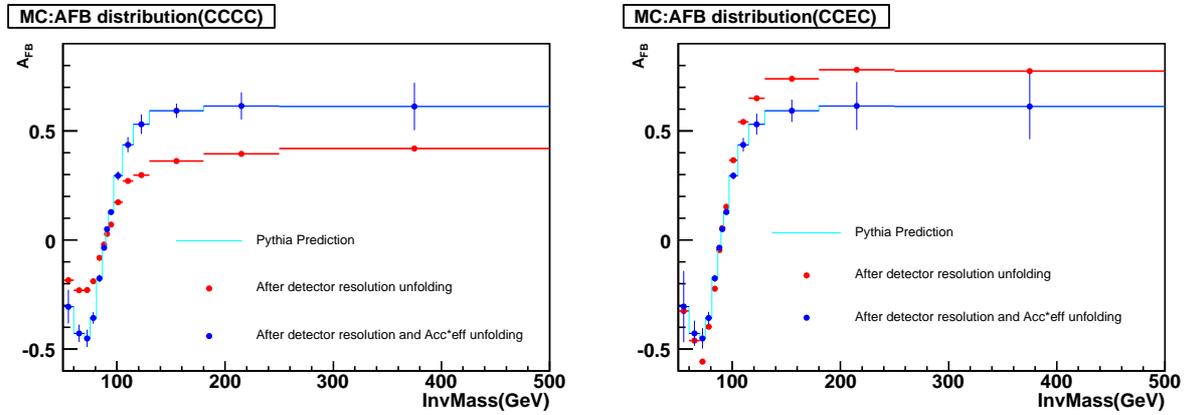


Figure 7.12: Applying detector resolution and  $\text{acc} \times \text{eff}$  unfolding on Geant MC sample, for CC-CC and CC-EC events.

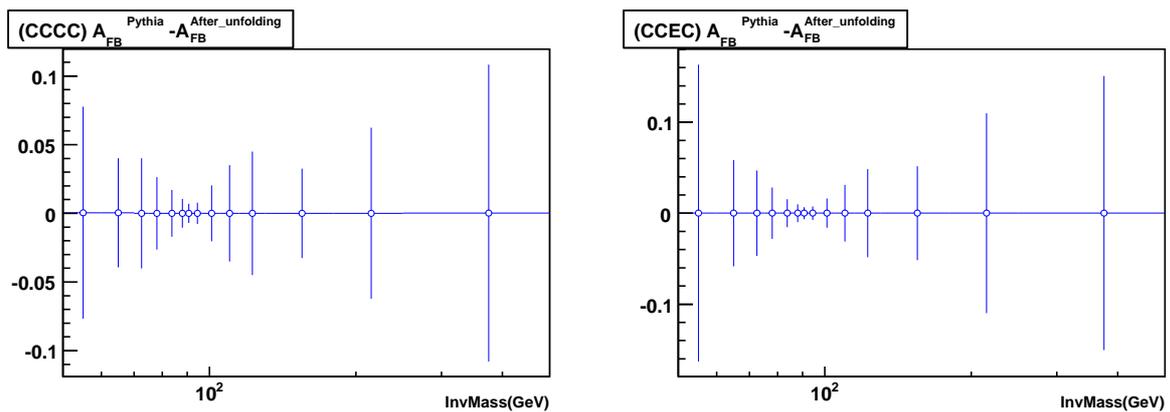


Figure 7.13: Differences between the truth  $A_{FB}$  from PYTHIA and  $A_{FB}$  after all corrections applied for CC-CC and CC-EC events.

## 7.4.2 Second closure test on the unfolding method

Since we rely on the GEANT MC simulation for the response matrix and also the acceptance corrections, we did another closure test. At generator level, we introduced a random number (50%) to reverse forward (backward) events into backward (forward) events. As a result, the generator-level  $A_{FB}$  distribution has changed totally. We used this new GEANT MC events and applied the same techniques to correct the measured  $A_{FB}$ . The final unfolded  $A_{FB}$  with the modified generate-level  $A_{FB}$  is shown in Fig. 7.14, pretty good agreement has been observed.

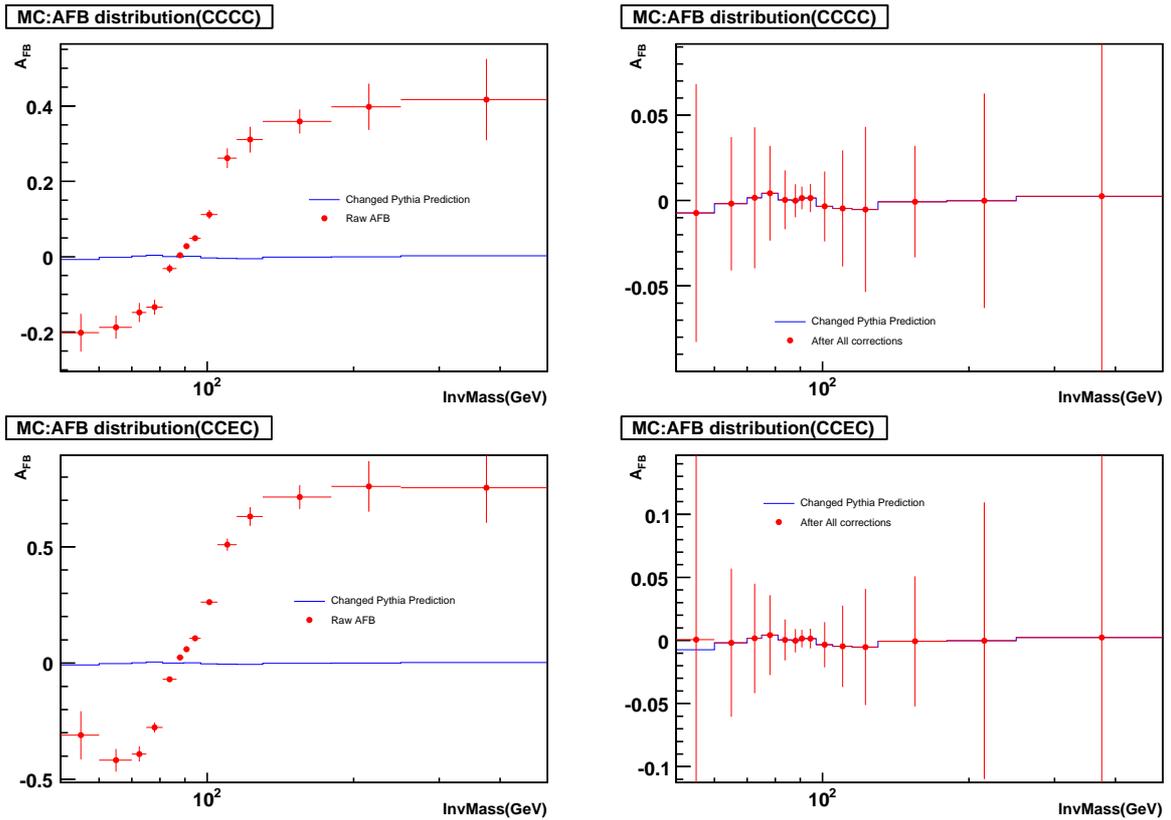


Figure 7.14: Comparison between changed generate-level  $A_{FB}$  and unfolded  $A_{FB}$  of Geant MC sample, for CC-CC and CC-EC events.

## 7. UNFOLDING AND CLOSURE TEST

### 7.4.3 Third closure test on the unfolding method

For the above two closure tests, we used the same GEANT MC sample to measure raw  $A_{FB}$  and derive detector resolution unfolding and  $\text{acc} \times \text{eff}$  corrections, and we got perfect agreement. We also split the GEANT MC sample into two sub-samples, and use the first sample to measure raw  $A_{FB}$  distribution and use the second sample to measure all corrections, the final unfolded  $A_{FB}$  with the generate-level  $A_{FB}$  is shown in Fig. 7.15.

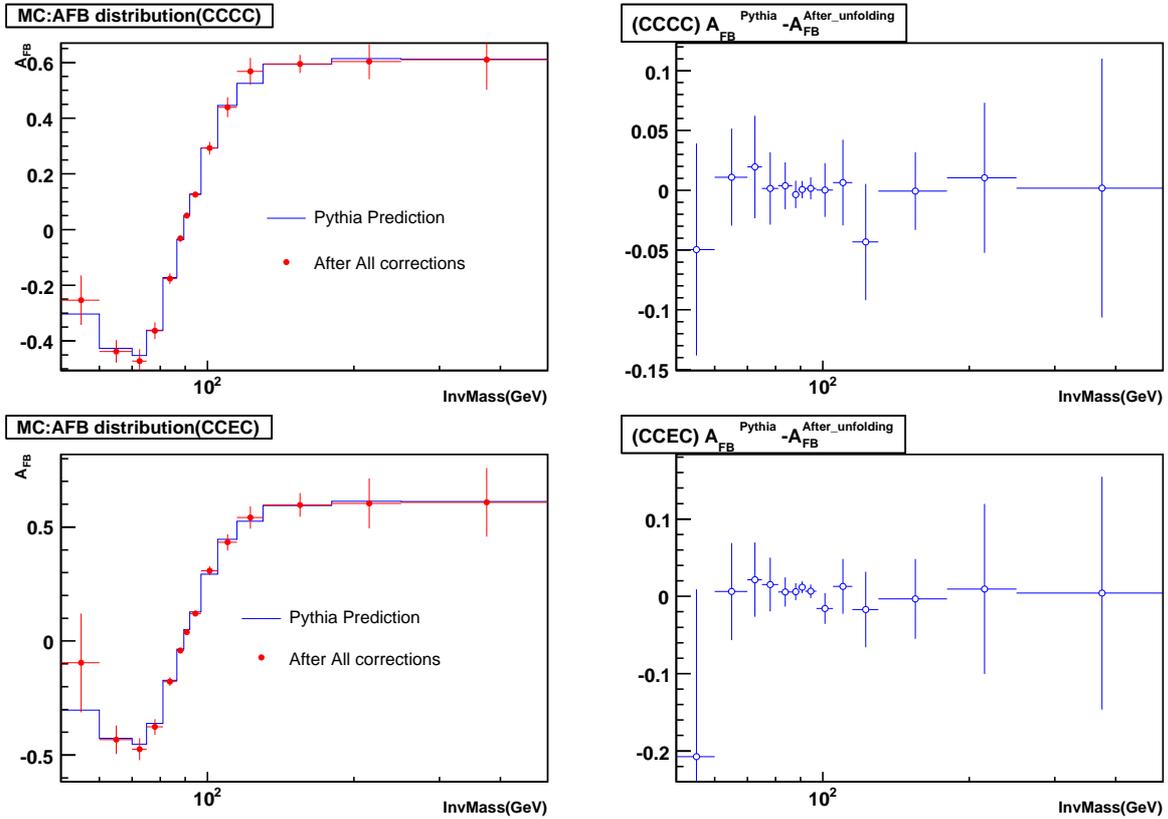


Figure 7.15: Differences between the truth  $A_{FB}$  from PYTHIA and  $A_{FB}$  after all corrections applied for CC-CC and CC-EC events.

# Chapter 8

## Forward-Backward Charge

### Asymmetry measurement

#### 8.1 Bias due to the unfolding method

We used the GEANT MC events to measure the response matrix, acceptance  $\times$  efficiency corrections, and these corrections depends on the input  $A_{FB}$  distribution, and the unfolded  $A_{FB}$  spectrum may be biased.

To measure the bias due to the unfolding method, we used a simple fast MC program. The fast MC simulation has reasonable assumptions about the detector energy resolution, kinematic+geometric acceptances and also selection efficiencies:

- the primary vertex is smeared with a Gaussian function with a width of 25 cm;
- both electron and positron are extrapolated from the primary vertex to the EM3 layer, detector eta and phi are calculated;

## 8. FORWARD-BACKWARD CHARGE ASYMMETRY MEASUREMENT

---

- electron and positron energy are smeared assuming 3% resolution;
- the normal CC and EC detector eta and phi cuts are applied on the smeared electron to simulate detector acceptance and an overall efficiency of 80% and 90% is assumed for CC and EC electrons according to the values we measured in data;
- $p_T > 25$  GeV cut applied on electron and positron.

We then run this fast MC simulation on 5 M PYTHIA generator-level events (with  $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.2315$ ) to measure the response matrix,  $\text{acc} \times \text{eff}$  corrections. And we then use two 4 M PYTHIA samples generated with  $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.22702$  and  $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.23602$  to measure the raw  $A_{FB}$  distributions. These two samples are the samples with the biggest deviations that we generated before and correspond to about  $\pm 3 \sigma$  of our uncertainty and  $\pm 30 \sigma$  of the world average uncertainty. We then unfold the raw  $A_{FB}$  distributions for  $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.22702$  and  $0.23602$  with the response matrix and  $\text{acc} \times \text{eff}$  corrections measured from the sample with  $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.2315$  to get the unfolded  $A_{FB}$  distribution. We used two independent 1 M PYTHIA samples with  $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.22702$  and  $0.23602$  to get the theoretical predictions so that we do not need to worry about the correlations between the generator-level and smeared-level events.

The difference between the PYTHIA predicted and unfolded  $A_{FB}$  distributions can be found at Fig. 8.1. We can see that there is a bias near the  $Z$ -pole: when all corrections are measured using a sample with higher input value of  $\sin^2 \theta_W$ , the unfolded  $A_{FB}$  tends to be lower than the true  $A_{FB}$ , and vice versa.

To remove this bias, we followed the suggestion of Thomas Nunnemann and Heidi

## 8.1 Bias due to the unfolding method

---

Schellman and did an iterative unfolding. The idea is first use corrections measured derived from a MC sample with very different input  $\sin^2 \theta_W$ , and then use the unfolded  $A_{FB}$  distribution to determine the best  $\sin^2 \theta_W$ . Then we use another MC sample with the measured  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  to obtain all corrections as input for the next iteration of unfolding. The above steps are repeated until the measured  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  is stable. The convergence is pretty fast, for  $-3\sigma$  sample with true  $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.22702$ , we only need two steps: first 0.23152 and then 0.2272 for the input  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  value to measure all corrections. For  $+3\sigma$  sample with true  $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.23572$ , we need four steps: 0.23152, 0.2346, 0.2351, and then 0.2355 for the input  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  value to measure all corrections.

The difference between the PYTHIA predicted and unfolded  $A_{FB}$  distributions after using all corrections derived from the MC sample with the best measured  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  values can be found at Fig. 8.2. No obvious trend remains and the remaining difference between the unfolded and the true  $A_{FB}$  can be due to the fluctuation of the MC samples used to measure all corrections (described in Sect. 8.3.7).

For the unfolding applied on real data, we also applied the same analysis procedure described above, and the best measured  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  quickly converged to the extracted  $A_{FB}$  explained in Sect. 9.3. We used the Geant MC samples with the measured  $A_{FB}$  and  $\pm 1\sigma$  variations to estimate the uncertainty on the unfolded  $A_{FB}$  distribution (as described in Sect. 8.3.10).

## 8. FORWARD-BACKWARD CHARGE ASYMMETRY MEASUREMENT

---

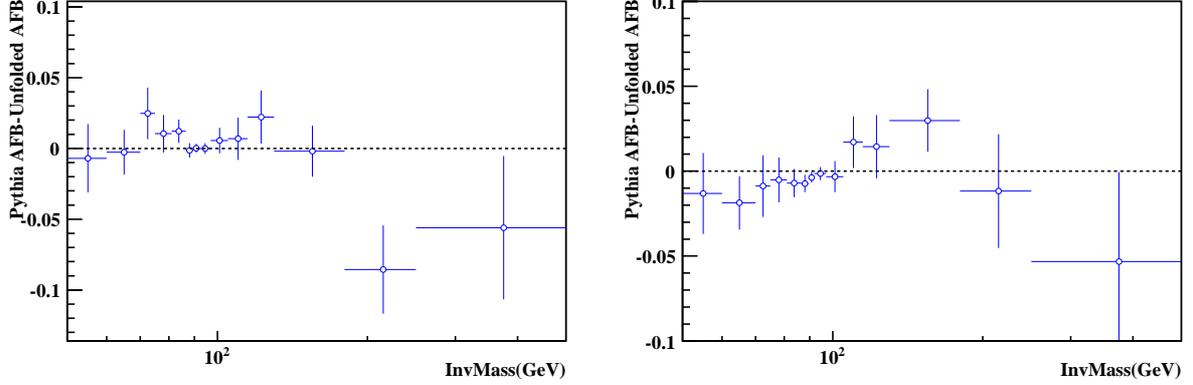


Figure 8.1: Difference between the PYTHIA predicted and unfolded  $A_{FB}$  for  $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.22702$  (Left) and  $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.23702$  (Right) but using the response matrix,  $\text{acc} \times \text{eff}$  corrections measured from events generated with  $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.23152$ .

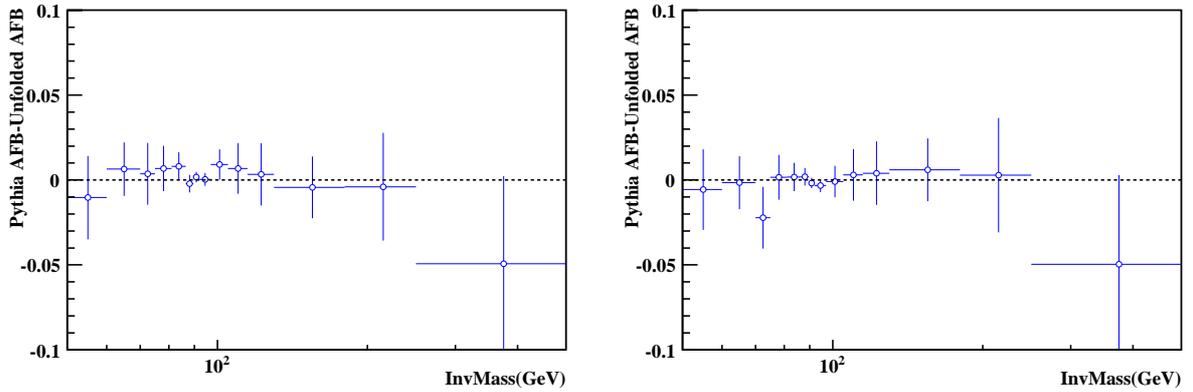


Figure 8.2: Difference between the PYTHIA predicted and unfolded  $A_{FB}$  for  $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.22702$  (Left) and  $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.23702$  (Right) but using the response matrix,  $\text{acc} \times \text{eff}$  corrections derived from events generated with the best measured  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  values:  $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.2272$  and  $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.2355$ .

## 8.2 Data unfolding

After we tested all analysis processes using full MC events, we apply the same procedure on real data. Fig. 8.3 to Fig. 8.5 show the raw  $A_{FB}$  distribution and the  $A_{FB}$  distribution after each correction: (1) detector resolution unfolding; (2) acceptance  $\times$  efficiency corrections; (3) charge misID rate corrections. The final value of  $A_{FB}$  for both CCCC and CCEC events can be found in Tab. 8.1.

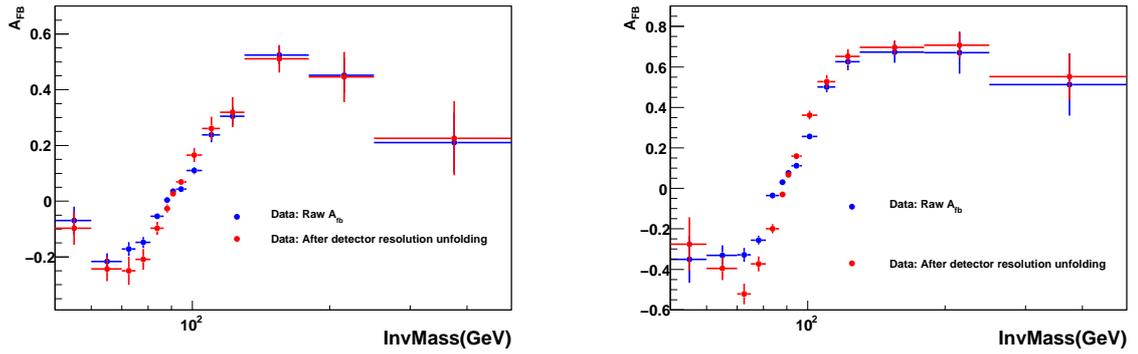


Figure 8.3: Data raw  $A_{FB}$  and after detector resolution unfolding  $A_{FB}$  for CC-CC and CC-EC events.

## 8. FORWARD-BACKWARD CHARGE ASYMMETRY MEASUREMENT

---

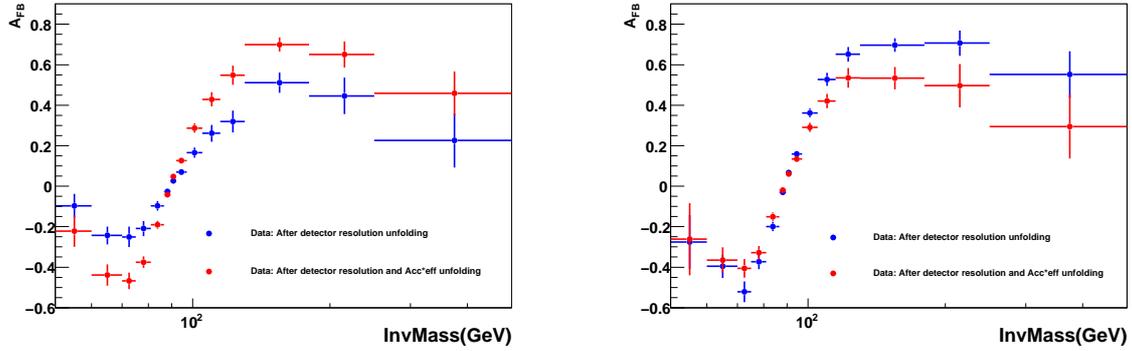


Figure 8.4: Data after detector resolution unfolding  $A_{FB}$  and after detector resolution and  $Acc \times eff$  unfolding  $A_{FB}$  for CC-CC and CC-EC events.

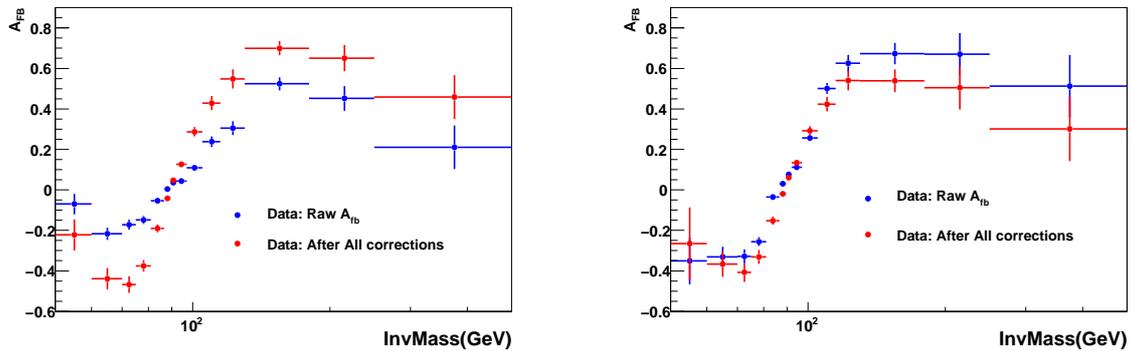


Figure 8.5: Data raw  $A_{FB}$  and after all corrections  $A_{FB}$  for CC-CC and CC-EC events.

## 8.2 Data unfolding

$\langle M_{ee} \rangle$ (GeV)	Predicted $A_{FB}$		Unfolded $A_{FB}$
	PYTHIA	ZGRAD2	
54.5	-0.293	-0.307	$-0.280 \pm 0.037 \pm 0.022$
64.9	-0.426	-0.431	$-0.456 \pm 0.020 \pm 0.016$
72.6	-0.449	-0.452	$-0.430 \pm 0.015 \pm 0.020$
78.3	-0.354	-0.354	$-0.343 \pm 0.011 \pm 0.013$
84.4	-0.174	-0.166	$-0.175 \pm 0.006 \pm 0.011$
88.4	-0.033	-0.031	$-0.033 \pm 0.003 \pm 0.005$
90.9	0.051	0.052	$0.052 \pm 0.003 \pm 0.004$
93.4	0.127	0.129	$0.130 \pm 0.003 \pm 0.005$
99.9	0.289	0.296	$0.303 \pm 0.007 \pm 0.012$
109.1	0.427	0.429	$0.441 \pm 0.014 \pm 0.015$
121.3	0.526	0.530	$0.572 \pm 0.020 \pm 0.016$
147.9	0.593	0.603	$0.677 \pm 0.022 \pm 0.014$
206.4	0.613	0.600	$0.613 \pm 0.042 \pm 0.016$
310.5	0.616	0.615	$0.440 \pm 0.068 \pm 0.008$
584.4	0.616	0.615	$0.813 \pm 0.170 \pm 0.010$

Table 8.1: The first column shows the cross section weighted average of the invariant mass in each mass bin derived from PYTHIA. The second and third columns show the  $A_{FB}$  predictions from PYTHIA and ZGRAD2. The last column is the unfolded  $A_{FB}$ ; the first uncertainty is statistical, and the second is systematic.

## 8. FORWARD-BACKWARD CHARGE ASYMMETRY MEASUREMENT

---

### 8.3 Uncertainties

#### 8.3.1 Systematic uncertainty from efficiency scale factors

As we apply data-MC efficiency scale factors on GEANT MC events, we need to know the uncertainty due to the electron efficiency scale factors. Each scale factor is fitted with a straight line, and the fitted errors (both  $+\sigma$  and  $-\sigma$ ) are used to estimate the systematic uncertainty on  $A_{FB}$ . We find that the uncertainties due to the scale factors are negligible, the main reason is the scale factors are applied on both forward and backward events, while changing both forward and backward events at the same time will have no effect on the final  $A_{FB}$  distribution.

#### 8.3.2 Systematic uncertainty from efficiency difference between forward and backward events

As mentioned in Sect. 5, the EMID efficiencies between forward and backward events are consistent with each other for both data and GEANT MC. In both data and GEANT MC, the forward and backward events are treated the same way, possible differences between forward and backward events can cause systematic uncertainties on the final  $A_{FB}$  distribution. The ratio for the forward and backward efficiencies can be found in Table. 5.4.

$$\begin{aligned} A_{FB} &= \frac{N_{meas}^F - N_{meas}^B}{N_{meas}^F + N_{meas}^B} \\ &= \frac{N_{all}^F \cdot \epsilon_F - N_{all}^B \cdot \epsilon_B}{N_{all}^F \cdot \epsilon_F + N_{all}^B \cdot \epsilon_B} \end{aligned}$$

$$\begin{aligned}
 &= \frac{\frac{N_{all}^F}{N_{all}^B} \cdot \epsilon_F - 1}{\frac{N_{all}^F}{N_{all}^B} \cdot \epsilon_B + 1} \\
 &= \frac{a \cdot f - 1}{a \cdot f + 1}
 \end{aligned}$$

where

- $a : \frac{N_{all}^F}{N_{all}^B}$ , since it's only a fraction of numbers, so we will use  $\frac{N_{meas}^F}{N_{meas}^B}$  instead of  $\frac{N_{all}^F}{N_{all}^B}$
- $f : \frac{\epsilon_F}{\epsilon_B}$  is the factor we get in Table. 5.4.

– For CCCC events:

$$\begin{aligned}
 f_{CCCC} &= \left( \frac{\epsilon_F^{PreID}(CC) \cdot \epsilon_F^{EMID}(CC) \cdot \epsilon_F^{TrkMatch}(CC)}{\epsilon_B^{PreID}(CC) \cdot \epsilon_B^{EMID}(CC) \cdot \epsilon_B^{TrkMatch}(CC)} \right)^2 \\
 &= (f^{PreID}(CC) \cdot f^{EMID}(CC) \cdot f^{TrkMatch}(CC))^2
 \end{aligned}$$

– For CCEC events:

$$\begin{aligned}
 f_{CCEC} &= \frac{\epsilon_F^{PreID}(CC) \cdot \epsilon_F^{EMID}(CC) \cdot \epsilon_F^{TrkMatch}(CC)}{\epsilon_B^{PreID}(CC) \cdot \epsilon_B^{EMID}(CC) \cdot \epsilon_B^{TrkMatch}(CC)} \times \\
 &\quad \frac{\epsilon_F^{PreID}(EC) \cdot \epsilon_F^{EMID}(EC)}{\epsilon_B^{PreID}(EC) \cdot \epsilon_B^{EMID}(EC)} \\
 &= f^{PreID}(CC) \cdot f^{EMID}(CC) \cdot f^{TrkMatch}(CC) \cdot \\
 &\quad f^{PreID}(EC) \cdot f^{EMID}(EC)
 \end{aligned}$$

So uncertainties for each mass bins can be get like:

$$\begin{aligned}
 \sigma_{\frac{F}{B}} &= \frac{a \cdot \sigma_f(a \cdot \sigma_f + 1) - a \cdot \sigma_f(a \cdot \sigma_f - 1)}{(a \cdot f + 1)^2} \\
 &= \frac{2a \cdot \sigma_f}{(a \cdot f + 1)^2}
 \end{aligned}$$

The uncertainties due to differences between forward and backward efficiencies are shown in Tab. 8.2

## 8. FORWARD-BACKWARD CHARGE ASYMMETRY MEASUREMENT

---

Mass region( $\text{GeV}/c^2$ )	CCCC	CCEC
$50.0 < M_{ee} < 60.0$	0.0020	0.0016
$60.0 < M_{ee} < 72.0$	0.0019	0.0016
$72.0 < M_{ee} < 75.0$	0.0019	0.0016
$75.0 < M_{ee} < 81.0$	0.0020	0.0017
$81.0 < M_{ee} < 86.5$	0.0020	0.0018
$86.5 < M_{ee} < 89.5$	0.0020	0.0018
$89.5 < M_{ee} < 92.0$	0.0020	0.0018
$92.0 < M_{ee} < 97.0$	0.0020	0.0018
$97.0 < M_{ee} < 105.0$	0.0020	0.0017
$105.0 < M_{ee} < 115.0$	0.0019	0.0014
$115.0 < M_{ee} < 130.0$	0.0018	0.0012
$130.0 < M_{ee} < 180.0$	0.0014	0.0011
$180.0 < M_{ee} < 250.0$	0.0016	0.0011
$250.0 < M_{ee} < 500.0$	0.0019	0.0014
$500 < M_{ee} < 1000$	0.0005	0.0011

Table 8.2: CC-CC and CC-EC events AFB systematic Uncertainty due to difference between Forward and Backward efficiency.

### 8.3.3 Systematic uncertainty from energy scale and energy resolution

The systematic uncertainty due to energy scale is shown in Table 8.4 and the uncertainty due to energy scale is shown in Table 8.3. The columns which are all 0s are due to the fact that the EC energy scale and smear parameters will not affect CC-CC events. And for the uncertainty due to electron energy non-linearity, we use the differences between the unfolded  $A_{FB}$  distributions with and without non-linearity term, the uncertainties are shown in Table 8.5.

### 8.3.4 Systematic uncertainty from PDF

The systematic uncertainty due to PDF is estimated by reweighting the central PDF to 40 CTEQ6.1 error PDF sets, and the PDF uncertainty is calculated using the prescription suggested by CTEQ group:

$$\Delta A^\pm = \sqrt{\sum_{i=1}^{20} (A_i^\pm - A_0)^2} \quad (8.1)$$

where  $A_i^\pm$  is the asymmetry measured for PDF error set  $i$  and  $A_0$  is the asymmetry for the central PDF set. This will give asymmetric errors and we decided to use the maximum of positive and negative uncertainties as the final uncertainty. The uncertainty for each bin is listed in Tab. 8.6.

### 8.3.5 Systematic uncertainty from higher order corrections

So far we only used LO PYTHIA generator for the  $A_{FB}$  calculation. Higher-order QCD, QED and electroweak corrections can change the generator-level  $A_{FB}$  predictions. Due

## 8. FORWARD-BACKWARD CHARGE ASYMMETRY MEASUREMENT

---

Mass region( $\text{GeV}/c^2$ )	CCCC(CC/EC)		CCEC(CC/EC)	
$50.0 < M_{ee} < 60.0$	0.0004	0.0000	0.0016	0.0022
$60.0 < M_{ee} < 70.0$	0.0013	0.0000	0.0020	0.0034
$70.0 < M_{ee} < 75.0$	0.0025	0.0000	0.0005	0.0013
$75.0 < M_{ee} < 81.0$	0.0027	0.0000	0.0025	0.0015
$81.0 < M_{ee} < 86.5$	0.0026	0.0000	0.0018	0.0025
$86.5 < M_{ee} < 89.5$	0.0008	0.0000	0.0007	0.0011
$89.5 < M_{ee} < 92.0$	0.0011	0.0000	0.0011	0.0010
$92.0 < M_{ee} < 97.0$	0.0007	0.0000	0.0008	0.0007
$97.0 < M_{ee} < 105.0$	0.0025	0.0000	0.0029	0.0034
$105.0 < M_{ee} < 115.0$	0.0019	0.0000	0.0009	0.0014
$115.0 < M_{ee} < 130.0$	0.0040	0.0000	0.0006	0.0007
$130.0 < M_{ee} < 180.0$	0.0016	0.0000	0.0001	0.0002
$180.0 < M_{ee} < 250.0$	0.0002	0.0000	0.0003	0.0004
$250.0 < M_{ee} < 500.0$	0.0003	0.0000	0.0001	0.0003
$500 < M_{ee} < 1000$	0.0001	0.0000	0.0001	0.0006

Table 8.3: CC-CC and CC-EC  $A_{FB}$  systematic uncertainty due to CC or EC energy smearing parameters. The systematic shift is tested in two directions ( $+1\sigma$  and  $-1\sigma$  of the each variables, and we choose the larger one.) As expected, the EC energy smearing parameter has no effect on CCCC  $A_{FB}$  distribution.

to the fact that  $\cos\theta^*$  is calculated in the Collin-Soper frame, the impact of the initial-state QCD correction is minimized. The QED correction is minimized due to the fact

Mass region(GeV/ $c^2$ )	CCCC(CC/EC)		CCEC(CC/EC)	
$50.0 < M_{ee} < 60.0$	0.0006	0.0000	0.0020	0.0023
$60.0 < M_{ee} < 70.0$	0.0021	0.0000	0.0031	0.0032
$70.0 < M_{ee} < 75.0$	0.0011	0.0000	0.0011	0.0027
$75.0 < M_{ee} < 81.0$	0.0010	0.0000	0.0010	0.0006
$81.0 < M_{ee} < 86.5$	0.0020	0.0000	0.0016	0.0027
$86.5 < M_{ee} < 89.5$	0.0006	0.0000	0.0015	0.0016
$89.5 < M_{ee} < 92.0$	0.0007	0.0000	0.0010	0.0007
$92.0 < M_{ee} < 97.0$	0.0010	0.0000	0.0012	0.0018
$97.0 < M_{ee} < 105.0$	0.0005	0.0000	0.0023	0.0034
$105.0 < M_{ee} < 115.0$	0.0017	0.0000	0.0016	0.0016
$115.0 < M_{ee} < 130.0$	0.0031	0.0000	0.0003	0.0020
$130.0 < M_{ee} < 180.0$	0.0011	0.0000	0.0003	0.0003
$180.0 < M_{ee} < 250.0$	0.0003	0.0000	0.0003	0.0004
$250.0 < M_{ee} < 500.0$	0.0003	0.0000	0.0002	0.0001
$500 < M_{ee} < 1000$	0.0001	0.0000	0.0003	0.0000

Table 8.4: CC-CC and CC-EC  $A_{FB}$  systematic uncertainty due to CC or EC energy scale factor. The systematic shift is tested in two directions ( $+1\sigma$  and  $-1\sigma$  of the each variables, and we choose the larger one.) As expected, EC energy scale factor has no effect on CCCC  $A_{FB}$  distribution.

that electrons and the emitted photons are very close to each other and can not be distinguished in the detector.

## 8. FORWARD-BACKWARD CHARGE ASYMMETRY MEASUREMENT

---

Mass	CCCC	CCEC
$50.0 < M_{ee} < 60.0$	0.0129	0.0191
$60.0 < M_{ee} < 70.0$	0.0019	0.0019
$70.0 < M_{ee} < 75.0$	0.0028	0.0039
$75.0 < M_{ee} < 81.0$	0.0003	0.0012
$81.0 < M_{ee} < 86.5$	0.0002	0.0006
$86.5 < M_{ee} < 89.5$	0.0000	0.0001
$89.5 < M_{ee} < 92.0$	0.0000	0.0002
$92.0 < M_{ee} < 97.0$	0.0002	0.0002
$97.0 < M_{ee} < 105.0$	0.0001	0.0008
$105.0 < M_{ee} < 115.0$	0.0034	0.0024
$115.0 < M_{ee} < 130.0$	0.0006	0.0043
$130.0 < M_{ee} < 180.0$	0.0010	0.0005
$180.0 < M_{ee} < 250.0$	0.0049	0.0035
$250.0 < M_{ee} < 500.0$	0.0061	0.0006
$500 < M_{ee} < 1000$	0.0111	0.0622

Table 8.5: Systematic uncertainties on  $A_{FB}$  measurement for CCCC and CCEC events due to energy non-linearity.

For the theoretical predictions, we tried the following generators:

- (1) 5M  $Z/\gamma^* \rightarrow ee$  events using PYTHIA;
- (2) 5M  $Z/\gamma^* \rightarrow ee$  events using PYTHIA with tuned  $Z$  boson  $p_T$  distribution;
- (3) 5M  $Z/\gamma^* \rightarrow ee$  events using PYTHIA with internal bremsstrahlung turned off, later

Mass region (GeV/ $c^2$ )	PDF uncertainty
$50 < M_{ee} < 60$	0.0073
$60 < M_{ee} < 70$	0.0103
$70 < M_{ee} < 75$	0.0113
$75 < M_{ee} < 81$	0.0097
$81 < M_{ee} < 86.5$	0.0051
$86.5 < M_{ee} < 89.5$	0.0015
$89.5 < M_{ee} < 92$	0.0016
$92 < M_{ee} < 97$	0.0034
$97 < M_{ee} < 105$	0.0075
$105 < M_{ee} < 115$	0.0102
$115 < M_{ee} < 130$	0.0107
$130 < M_{ee} < 180$	0.0095
$180 < M_{ee} < 250$	0.0072
$250 < M_{ee} < 500$	0.0048
$500 < M_{ee} < 1000$	0.0010

Table 8.6: Systematic Uncertainty due to PDF uncertainty.

these events are passed through PHOTOS to simulate final state radiation;

(4) 5M  $Z/\gamma^* \rightarrow ee$  events using ZGRAD with tuned  $Z$  boson  $p_T$  distribution.

Fig. 8.6 shows the comparison of the generator-level  $A_{FB}$  distribution for sample (1) and (2) (Left) and for sample (1) and (3) (Right) to show the effect of QCD and QED corrections on  $A_{FB}$  separately. Fig. 8.7 shows the comparison of the generator-

## 8. FORWARD-BACKWARD CHARGE ASYMMETRY MEASUREMENT

---

level  $A_{FB}$  distribution between sample (1) and (4), since the samples (1) and (4) have different QCD, QED and electroweak corrections, we decided to use their difference as the systematic uncertainty due to all higher-order corrections. The systematic uncertainties for all 14 mass bins are listed in Tab. 8.7.

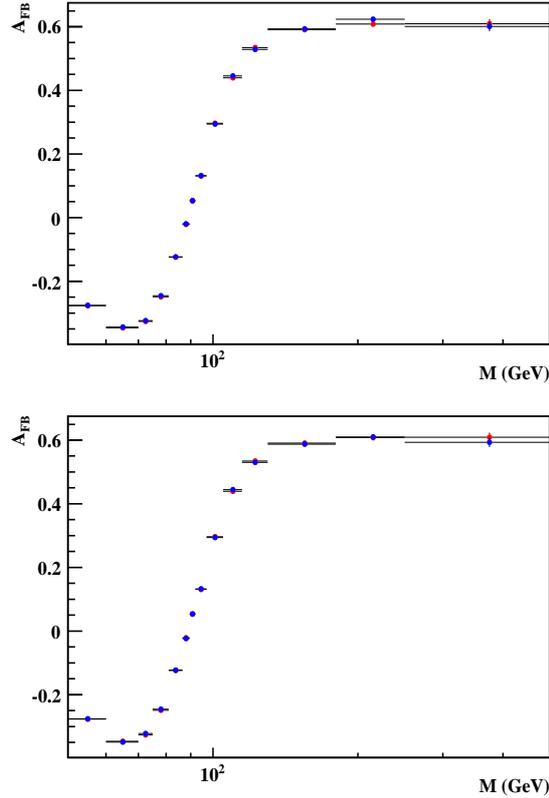


Figure 8.6: Left:  $A_{FB}$  predictions from the default PYTHIA (Red) and PYTHIA with tuned  $Z$  boson  $p_T$  distribution (Blue). Right:  $A_{FB}$  distribution from the default PYTHIA (Red) and PYTHIA with internal bremsstrahlung turned off but later pass through PHOTOS for FSR simulation (Blue).

The systematic uncertainty due to the electron and photon merging cone size (detector effect) is estimated using the generator level information, and the uncertainty is assigned as the  $A_{FB}$  difference using electron-photon merging cone size  $R = 0.2$  and

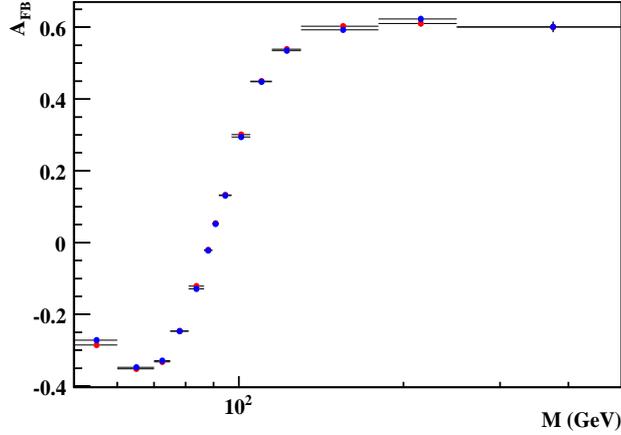


Figure 8.7:  $A_{FB}$  predictions from ZGRAD (Red) and PYTHIA (Blue).

$R = 0.3$ , the uncertainties are found to be negligible.

### 8.3.6 Systematic uncertainty from background subtraction

To estimate the uncertainty due to QCD background, we change the electron shower shape requirements on the electron. We use  $\text{HMx7} > 30$  in CC and  $\text{HMx8} > 40$  in EC as the default, and use the shape measured from  $\text{HMx7} > 12$  (CC) and  $\text{HMx8} > 20$  (EC) and  $\text{HMx7} > 50$  (CC) and  $\text{HMx8} > 75$  (EC) to estimate the systematic uncertainty.

The uncertainty due to background subtraction is shown in Tab. 8.8.

### 8.3.7 Systematic uncertainty due to full MC statistics

To determine the systematic uncertainty due to the statistical uncertainty on the response matrix and  $\text{acc} \times \text{eff}$  corrections, we divided the full MC events into ten subsamples and did ten pseudo-experiments. The spread of the ten unfolded  $A_{FB}$  for each bin divided by  $\sqrt{10}$  is the systematic uncertainty due to the limited full MC statistics.

## 8. FORWARD-BACKWARD CHARGE ASYMMETRY MEASUREMENT

---

Mass region ( $\text{GeV}/c^2$ )	$A_{FB}$ uncertainty
$50 < M_{ee} < 60$	0.0137
$60 < M_{ee} < 70$	0.0048
$70 < M_{ee} < 75$	0.0033
$75 < M_{ee} < 81$	0.0000
$81 < M_{ee} < 86.5$	0.0078
$86.5 < M_{ee} < 89.5$	0.0015
$89.5 < M_{ee} < 92$	0.0015
$92 < M_{ee} < 97$	0.0020
$97 < M_{ee} < 105$	0.0066
$105 < M_{ee} < 115$	0.0019
$115 < M_{ee} < 130$	0.0039
$130 < M_{ee} < 180$	0.0102
$180 < M_{ee} < 250$	0.0130
$250 < M_{ee} < 500$	0.0012
$500 < M_{ee} < 1000$	0.0012

Table 8.7: Systematic uncertainty due to QCD, QED and electroweak corrections.

The uncertainties for all mass bins are shown in Table 8.9.

### 8.3 Uncertainties

Mass region( $\text{GeV}/c^2$ )	CCCC(Shape/NOR)		CCEC(Shape/NOR)	
$50 < M_{ee} < 60$	0.0008	0.0000	0.0078	0.0001
$60 < M_{ee} < 70$	0.0002	0.0000	0.0004	0.0001
$70 < M_{ee} < 75$	0.0004	0.0000	0.0011	0.0001
$75 < M_{ee} < 81$	0.0002	0.0000	0.0007	0.0000
$81 < M_{ee} < 86.5$	0.0001	0.0000	0.0001	0.0000
$86.5 < M_{ee} < 89.5$	0.0000	0.0000	0.0001	0.0000
$89.5 < M_{ee} < 92$	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000
$92 < M_{ee} < 97$	0.0000	0.0000	0.0001	0.0000
$97 < M_{ee} < 105$	0.0000	0.0000	0.0001	0.0002
$105 < M_{ee} < 115$	0.0000	0.0000	0.0007	0.0001
$115 < M_{ee} < 130$	0.0006	0.0000	0.0023	0.0002
$130 < M_{ee} < 180$	0.0005	0.0000	0.0076	0.0004
$180 < M_{ee} < 250$	0.0003	0.0000	0.0018	0.0003
$250 < M_{ee} < 500$	0.0005	0.0000	0.0091	0.0001
$500 < M_{ee} < 1000$	0.0003	0.0000	0.0054	0.0002

Table 8.8: CC-CC and CC-EC  $A_{FB}$  systematic uncertainty due to QCD background shape and normalization.

## 8. FORWARD-BACKWARD CHARGE ASYMMETRY MEASUREMENT

---

Mass region( $\text{GeV}/c^2$ )	CCCC	CCEC
$50.0 < M_{ee} < 60.0$	0.0057	0.0184
$60.0 < M_{ee} < 70.0$	0.0074	0.0203
$70.0 < M_{ee} < 75.0$	0.0189	0.0159
$75.0 < M_{ee} < 81.0$	0.0073	0.0070
$81.0 < M_{ee} < 86.5$	0.0052	0.0031
$86.5 < M_{ee} < 89.5$	0.0039	0.0031
$89.5 < M_{ee} < 92.0$	0.0016	0.0015
$92.0 < M_{ee} < 97.0$	0.0023	0.0018
$97.0 < M_{ee} < 105.0$	0.0069	0.0049
$105.0 < M_{ee} < 115.0$	0.0125	0.0052
$115.0 < M_{ee} < 130.0$	0.0106	0.0055
$130.0 < M_{ee} < 180.0$	0.0019	0.0020
$180.0 < M_{ee} < 250.0$	0.0030	0.0036
$250.0 < M_{ee} < 500.0$	0.0014	0.0012
$500 < M_{ee} < 1000$	0.0031	0.0063

Table 8.9: CC-CC and CC-EC events AFB systematic uncertainty due to statistics of MC sample.

### 8.3.8 Systematic uncertainty from acceptance $\times$ efficiency corrections

To determine the systematic uncertainty due to acceptance and efficiency corrections, we use number of forward ( $N_F^{unfold}$ ) and backward ( $N_B^{unfold}$ ) events after detector res-

### 8.3 Uncertainties

olution unfolding, the central values and the uncertainties for acceptance  $\times$  efficiency can be found in Table. 7.1. The uncertainties for all mass bins are shown in Table 8.10.

Mass region( $\text{GeV}/c^2$ )	CCCC	CCEC
$50 < M_{ee} < 60$	0.0074	0.0190
$60 < M_{ee} < 70$	0.0085	0.0147
$70 < M_{ee} < 75$	0.0107	0.0149
$75 < M_{ee} < 81$	0.0084	0.0098
$81 < M_{ee} < 86.5$	0.0056	0.0057
$86.5 < M_{ee} < 89.5$	0.0036	0.0035
$89.5 < M_{ee} < 92$	0.0018	0.0017
$92 < M_{ee} < 97$	0.0025	0.0024
$97 < M_{ee} < 105$	0.0059	0.0056
$105 < M_{ee} < 115$	0.0092	0.0093
$115 < M_{ee} < 130$	0.0103	0.0123
$130 < M_{ee} < 180$	0.0016	0.0029
$180 < M_{ee} < 250$	0.0034	0.0057
$250 < M_{ee} < 500$	0.0016	0.0030
$500 < M_{ee} < 1000$	0.0018	0.0034

Table 8.10: CC-CC and CC-EC events AFB systematic uncertainty due to acceptance and efficiency corrections.

## 8. FORWARD-BACKWARD CHARGE ASYMMETRY MEASUREMENT

---

### 8.3.9 Systematic uncertainty from charge misID

To determine the systematic uncertainty due to charge mis-identification of CC electrons, we use the charge misID rate and uncertainties of each mass bins in Table 7.3. Since the effect of charge misID is very small in CC-CC events, we only do charge misID unfolding on CC-EC events. The uncertainties for all mass bins are shown in Table 8.11.

### 8.3.10 Systematic uncertainty from the input $A_{FB}$ distribution

This uncertainty comes from the bias of unfolding method due to the input  $A_{FB}$  distribution (Sect. 8.1). To estimate this uncertainty we use the measured  $\sin^2 \theta_W$ , and use Geant MC samples with the input  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  equals to the measured  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  central value plus and minus  $1\sigma$  (described in Sect. 9.3) to measure the response matrix and  $\text{acc} \times \text{eff}$  corrections, and then unfold the raw data. The uncertainties for all mass bins are shown in Table 8.12.

### 8.3.11 Uncertainties distribution

The statistics and systematic uncertainties of CCCC and CCEC events are compared in Fig. 8.8.

## 8.4 Comparison of $A_{FB}$ between corrected data and PYTHIA predictions

---

Mass region( $\text{GeV}/c^2$ )	CCEC
$50 < M_{ee} < 60$	0.0331
$60 < M_{ee} < 70$	0.0285
$70 < M_{ee} < 75$	0.0255
$75 < M_{ee} < 81$	0.0161
$81 < M_{ee} < 86.5$	0.0124
$86.5 < M_{ee} < 89.5$	0.0061
$89.5 < M_{ee} < 92$	0.0042
$92 < M_{ee} < 97$	0.0062
$97 < M_{ee} < 105$	0.0141
$105 < M_{ee} < 115$	0.0160
$115 < M_{ee} < 130$	0.0185
$130 < M_{ee} < 180$	0.0180
$180 < M_{ee} < 250$	0.0204
$250 < M_{ee} < 500$	0.0231
$500 < M_{ee} < 1000$	0.1784

Table 8.11: CC-EC events AFB systematic uncertainty due to charge mis-identification.

## 8.4 Comparison of $A_{FB}$ between corrected data and PYTHIA predictions

The final  $A_{FB}$  distribution for data after all corrections applied (here we assume SM couplings) and PYTHIA prediction can be found in Fig. 8.9. The comparison plots

## 8. FORWARD-BACKWARD CHARGE ASYMMETRY MEASUREMENT

---

Mass region( $\text{GeV}/c^2$ )	CCCC	CCEC
$50 < M_{ee} < 60$	0.0031	0.0024
$60 < M_{ee} < 70$	0.0008	0.0017
$70 < M_{ee} < 75$	0.0004	0.0016
$75 < M_{ee} < 81$	0.0036	0.0009
$81 < M_{ee} < 86.5$	0.0025	0.0006
$86.5 < M_{ee} < 89.5$	0.0030	0.0010
$89.5 < M_{ee} < 92$	0.0033	0.0009
$92 < M_{ee} < 97$	0.0021	0.0020
$97 < M_{ee} < 105$	0.0018	0.0011
$105 < M_{ee} < 115$	0.0010	0.0032
$115 < M_{ee} < 130$	0.0004	0.0004
$130 < M_{ee} < 180$	0.0009	0.0011
$180 < M_{ee} < 250$	0.0001	0.0001
$250 < M_{ee} < 500$	0.0001	0.0002
$500 < M_{ee} < 1000$	0.0009	0.0341

Table 8.12: CC-CC and CC-EC events AFB systematic uncertainty due to the input  $A_{FB}$  of the Geant MC sample used to derive the response matrix and  $\text{acc} \times \text{eff}$  corrections.

for  $50 < M_{ee} < 130$  GeV can be found in Fig. 8.10. The  $\chi^2$  value in the plots is calculated using the method described in Appendix C. And the discussion of EC electron with/without track-match cut is shown in Appendix D

## 8.4 Comparison of $A_{FB}$ between corrected data and PYTHIA predictions

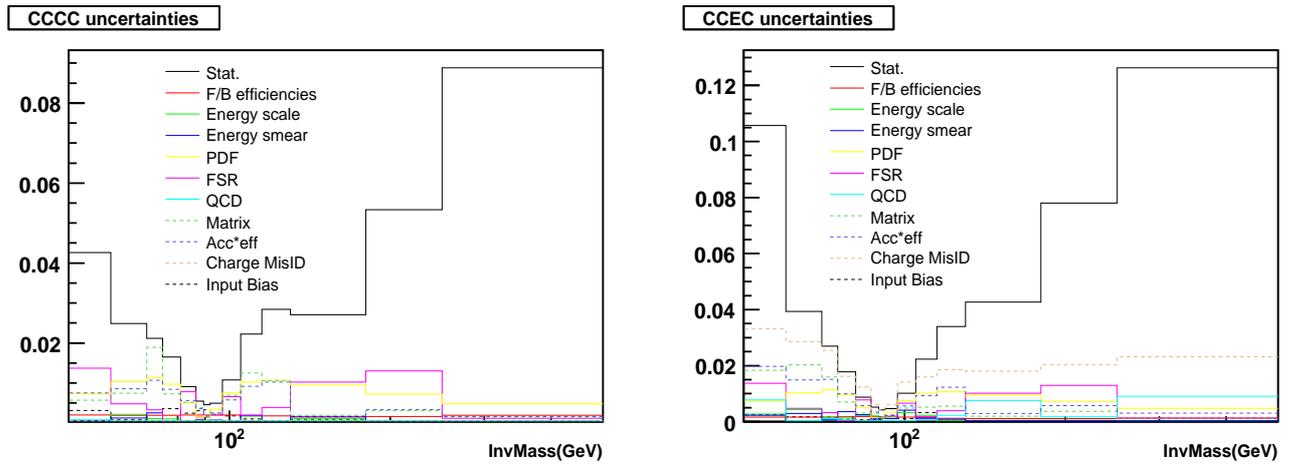


Figure 8.8: Comparison between statistics and all systematic uncertainties described in Chapter 10.

## 8. FORWARD-BACKWARD CHARGE ASYMMETRY MEASUREMENT

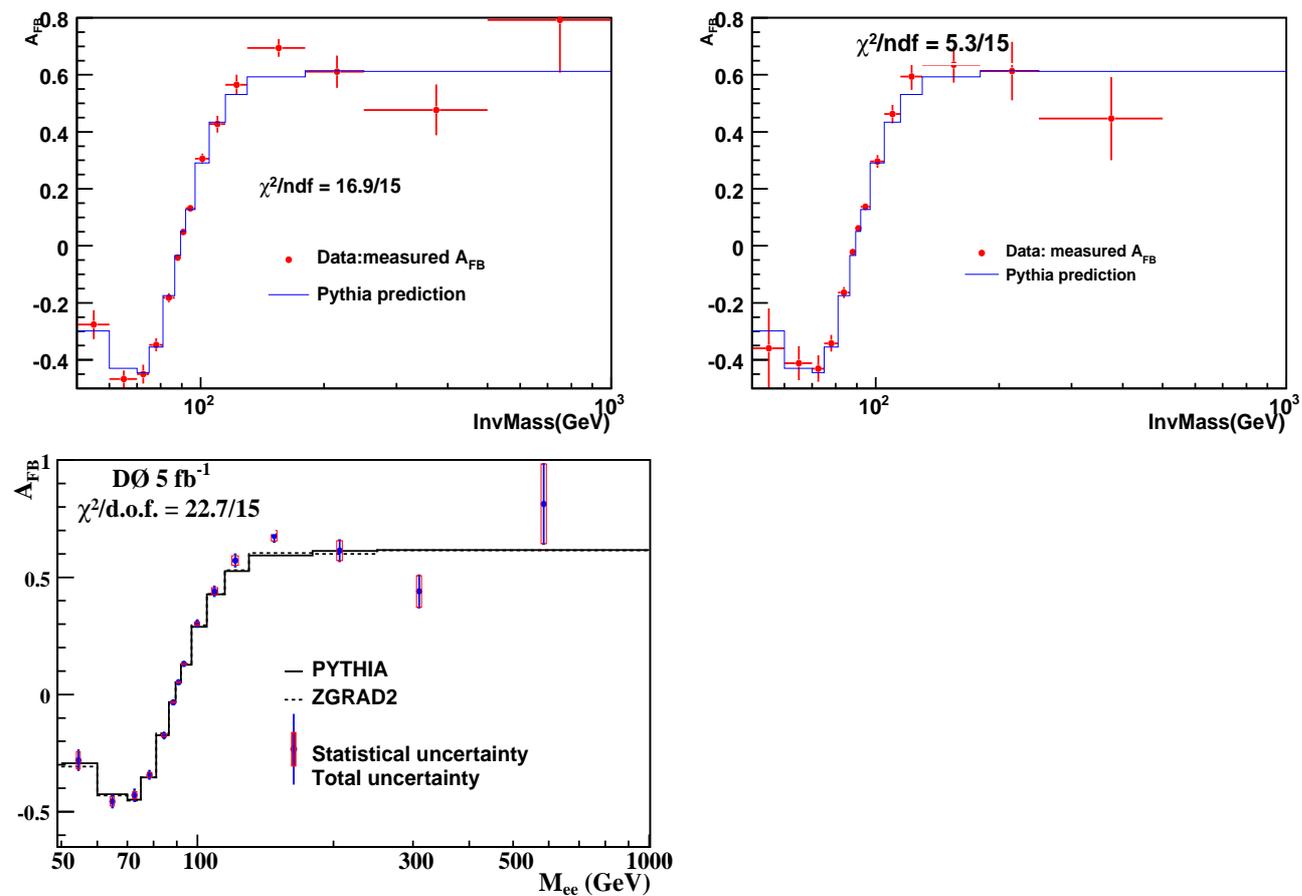


Figure 8.9:  $A_{FB}$  for data after all corrections and PYTHIA prediction for CCCC, CCEC and All events.

## 8.4 Comparison of $A_{FB}$ between corrected data and PYTHIA predictions

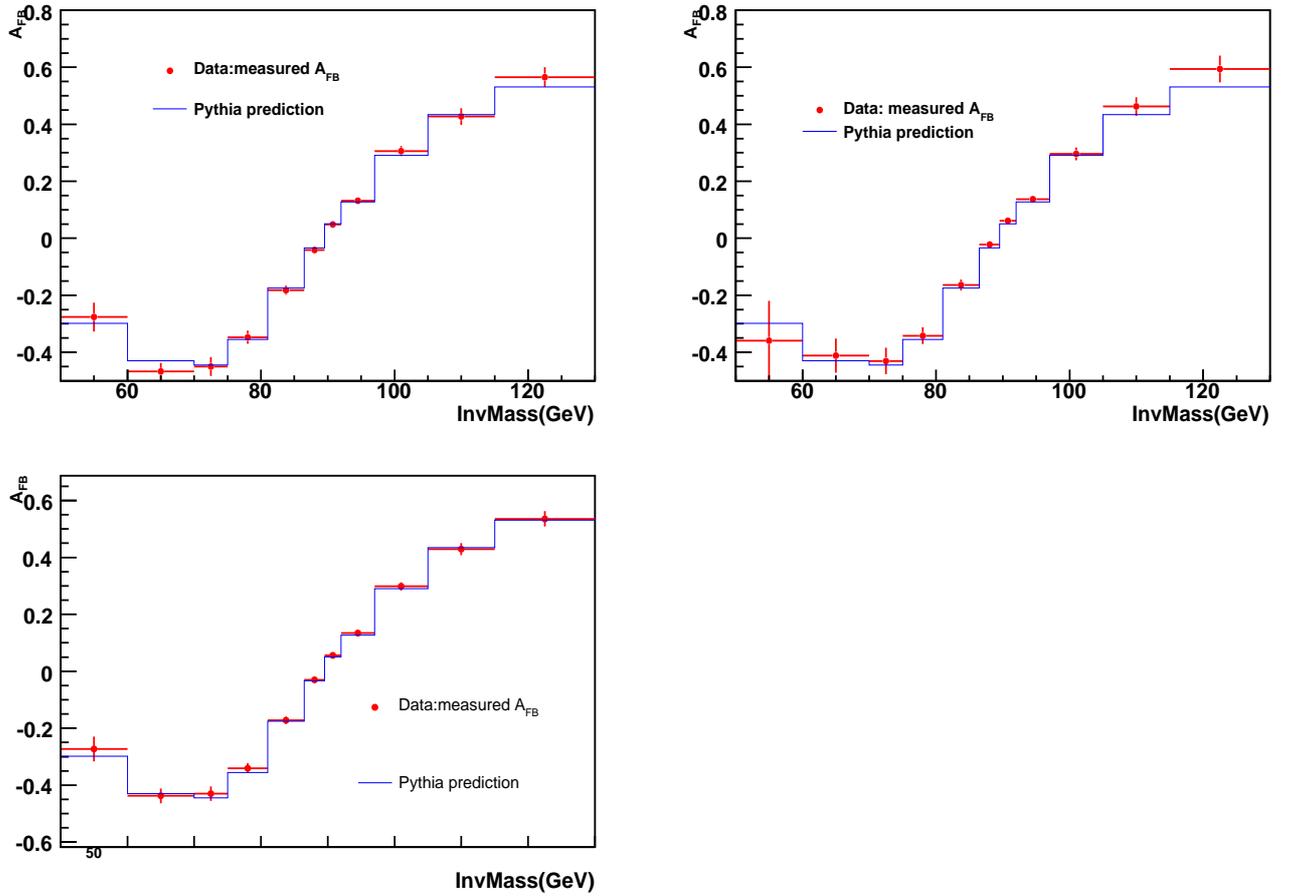


Figure 8.10:  $A_{FB}$  for data after all corrections and PYTHIA prediction for CCCC, CCEC and All in  $50 < M < 130$  GeV.

## 8. FORWARD-BACKWARD CHARGE ASYMMETRY MEASUREMENT

---

# Chapter 9

## Weak Mixing angle measurement

### 9.1 Bin centering

The bin center is determined as the average value of  $M_{ee}$  for each mass bin using 20M PYTHIA events. The bin centers for all 14 bins are: 54.53, 64.86, 72.57, 78.30, 84.36, 88.40, 90.89, 93.39, 99.90, 109.10, 121.30, 147.90, 206.40, 310.50.

### 9.2 Reweighting GEANT MC samples to different input $\sin^2 \theta_W$

The default GEANT MC files were generated with  $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.232$ , while we need to have GEANT MC files generated with other values of  $\sin^2 \theta_W$ . We can realize this by reweighting the generator-level  $M_{Z/\gamma^*} - \cos \theta^*$  distribution. To demonstrate the method works, we generate 5 M PYTHIA events with two different values of  $\sin^2 \theta_W$ : 0.2315 and 0.2375, measure the ratio of  $M_{Z/\gamma^*} - \cos \theta^*$  between the two samples, and then reweight

## 9. WEAK MIXING ANGLE MEASUREMENT

---

the sample with 0.2375 back to 0.2315. Fig. 9.1 and Fig. 9.2 show the electron and positron physics  $\eta$  distributions before and after reweighting (Blue for  $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.2315$  and Red for  $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.2375$ ). Good agreement is observed for these two samples after reweighting. This demonstrates that by doing 2D reweighting  $M_{Z/\gamma^*} - \cos \theta^*$ , we can get GEANT MC samples for any arbitrary value of  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  from a given GEANT MC events generated at just one  $\sin^2 \theta_W$ .

We generate 40 PYTHIA samples with  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  from 0.22552 to 0.23722 with step size 0.0003, and each sample contains 5 M events. The 2D  $M_{Z/\gamma^*} - \cos \theta^*$  reweighting factors between samples with a given  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  and the sample with the SM  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  are derived. By reweighting the PYTHIA generator-level distribution, we can get 40 GEANT MC samples with  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  from 0.22552 to 0.23722.

### 9.3 Extraction of $\sin^2 \theta_W$ using PYTHIA

The  $A_{FB}$  distribution is sensitive to  $\sin^2 \theta_W$ ; we compare the raw  $A_{FB}$  from real data with the predicted “measured”  $A_{FB}$  from GEANT MC samples with different input  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  to extract the best value of  $\sin^2 \theta_W$ . By using raw  $A_{FB}$  instead of unfolded  $A_{FB}$  distribution, we eliminate the uncertainties due to the unfolding method and can extract  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  with smaller uncertainty. The comparisons between data raw  $A_{FB}$  and MC raw  $A_{FB}$  are shown in Fig. 9.3 for CCCC, CCEC and both CCCC and CCEC.

Using both CCCC and CCEC events, we measure  $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.2306 \pm 0.0009$  (stat)

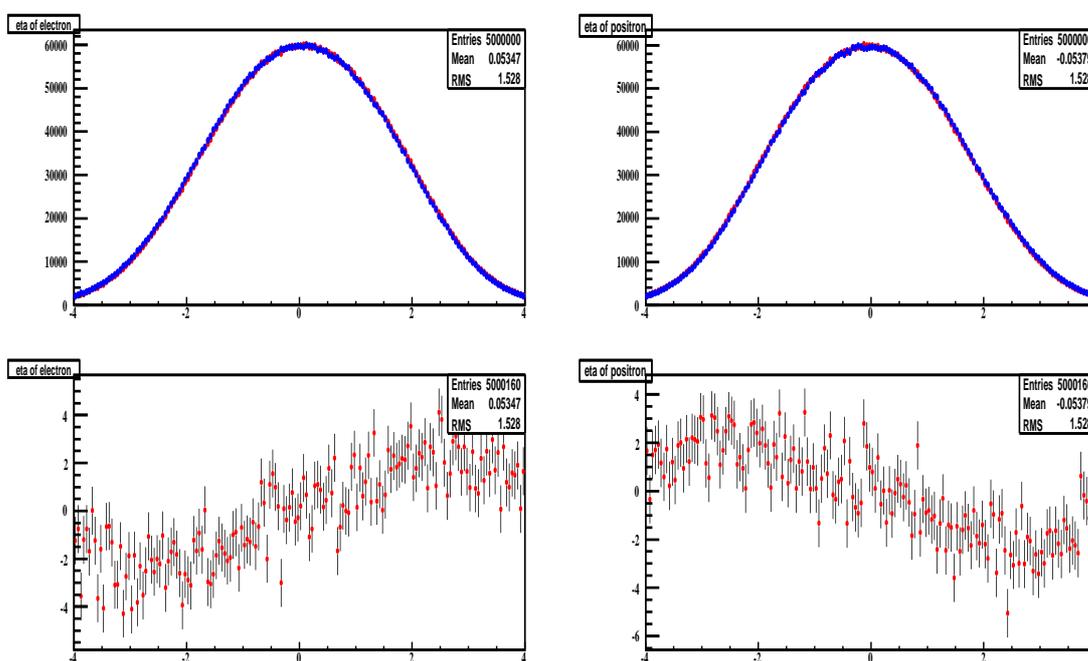


Figure 9.1: Electron and positron physics  $\eta$  distribution before  $M_{Z/\gamma^*} - \cos\theta^*$  reweight, Blue for  $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.2315$  and Red for  $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.2375$ . The bottom plot is  $\chi$  distribution between the two histograms.

## 9. WEAK MIXING ANGLE MEASUREMENT

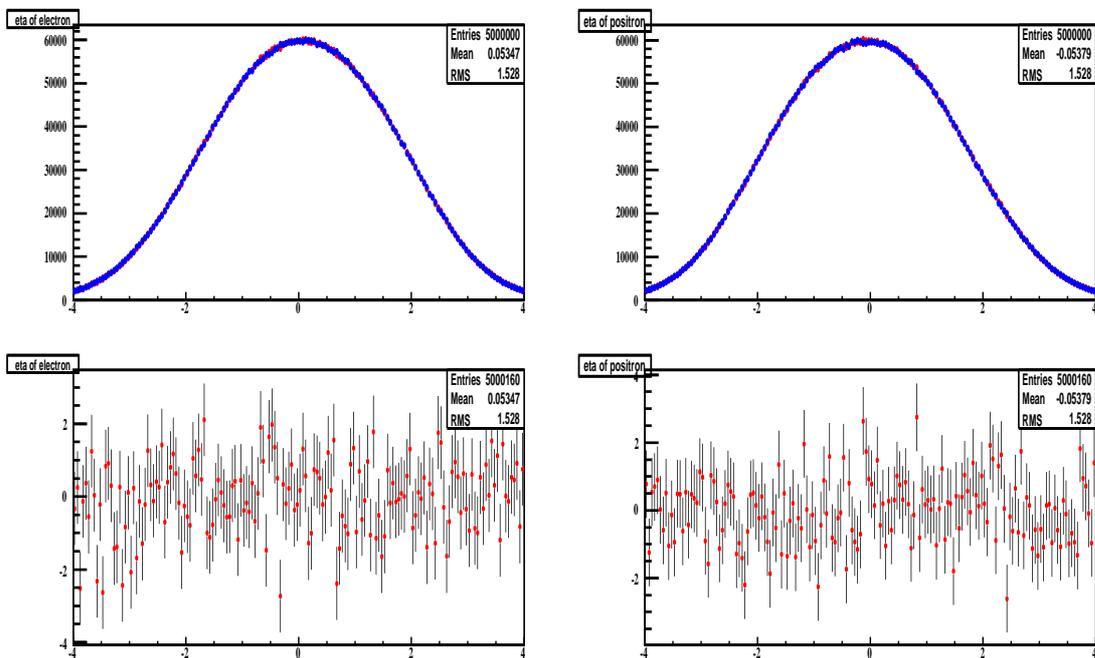


Figure 9.2: Electron and positron physics  $\eta$  distribution before  $M_{Z/\gamma^*} - \cos\theta^*$  reweight, Blue for  $\sin^2\theta_W = 0.2315$  and Red for  $\sin^2\theta_W = 0.2375$ . The bottom plot is  $\chi$  distribution between the two histograms.

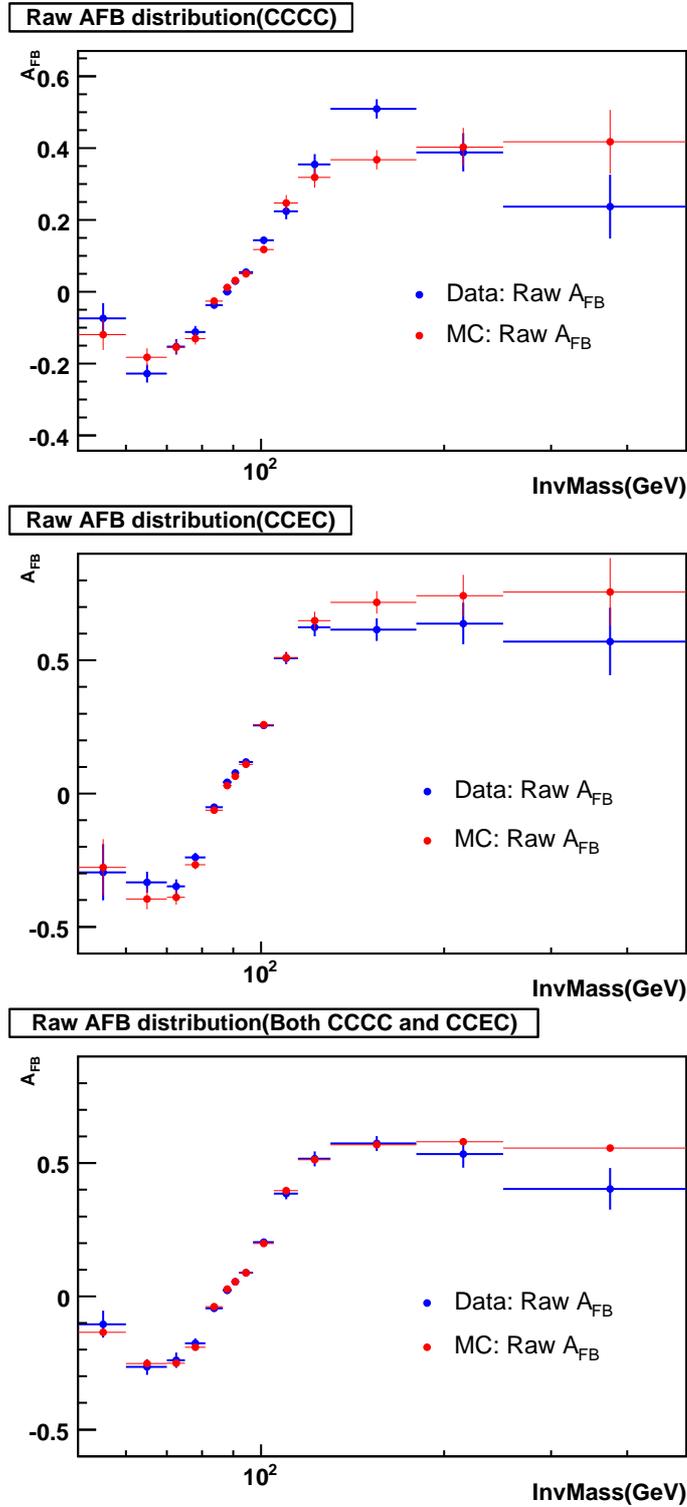


Figure 9.3: Comparisons plots between data raw  $A_{FB}$  and MC raw  $A_{FB}$ .

## 9. WEAK MIXING ANGLE MEASUREMENT

---

with  $\chi^2/dof = 9.5/14$  for  $50 < M < 500$  GeV. Fig. 9.4 shows the  $\chi^2$  between the raw data  $A_{FB}$  and the predicted “measured”  $A_{FB}$  distributions vs the input  $\sin^2 \theta_W$ . There are several sources of systematic uncertainty due to PDF, EM scale and resolution, backgrounds, electron-photon merging cone size, QCD corrections and QED corrections.

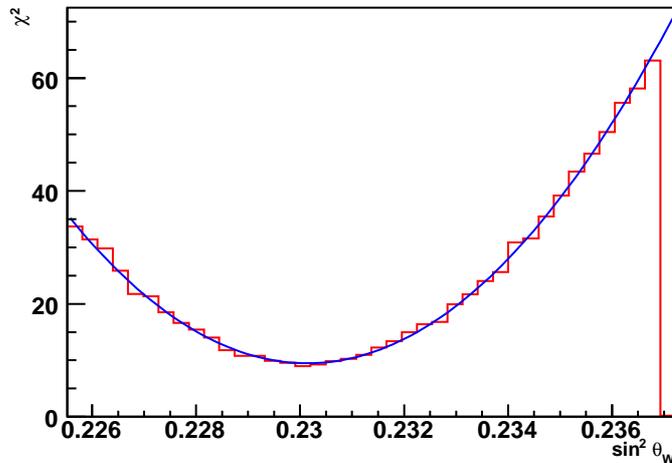


Figure 9.4:  $\chi^2$  between the raw  $A_{FB}$  from real data and the predicted “measured”  $A_{FB}$  from GEANT MC as a function of the input  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  in the GEANT MC sample. The black line is a second-order polynomial fit.

The vector and the axial couplings of the  $u$  and  $d$  quarks to the  $Z$  boson are different, the forward-backward asymmetry is expected to depend on the ratio of the  $u$  to  $d$  quark PDF’s. Thus, the choice of the PDF’s will affect the predicted “measured”  $A_{FB}$  distributions. The PDF uncertainty is calculated using a set of 40 PDFs provided by the CTEQ collaboration [56]. To estimate the systematic uncertainty on the extracted  $\sin^2 \theta_W$ , we reweight the GEANT MC samples to get the predicted “measured”  $A_{FB}$  distributions and extract  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  for each PDF set. The PDF uncertainty is calculated

### 9.3 Extraction of $\sin^2 \theta_W$ using PYTHIA

using the quadrature sum of all eigenvector contributions:

$$\Delta \sin^2 \theta_W = \sqrt{\sum_{i=1}^{20} [(\sin^2 \theta_W)_i^\pm - (\sin^2 \theta_W)_0]^2} \quad (9.1)$$

where  $(\sin^2 \theta_W)_i$  represents the extracted  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  for the shifts in eigenvector  $i$ . The systematic uncertainty on the extracted  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  due to PDF is measured to be 0.00046 for positive and 0.00048 for negative PDF sets using the above formula. We use 0.00048 as the final uncertainty. Fig. 9.5 shows the difference between the extracted  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  for each PDF set and the central PDF set.

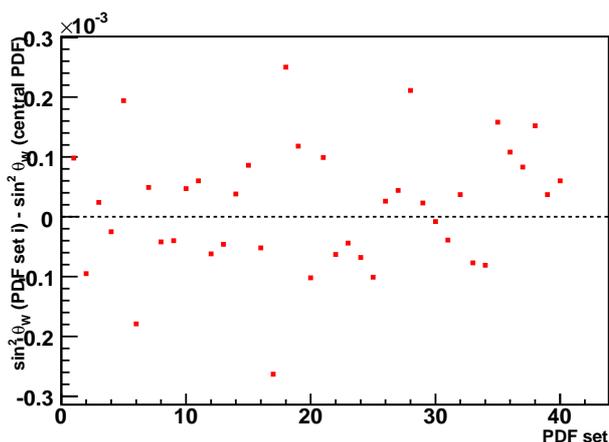


Figure 9.5: The difference between the extracted  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  from each PDF set and the central PDF set for 40 CTEQ6.1M PDF sets.

Using different energy scale and smearing in GEANT MC will also change the predicted "measured"  $A_{FB}$  distribution and thus affect the extracted  $\sin^2 \theta_W$ . The systematic uncertainty on  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  is 0.000178 due to uncertainty on CC energy scale, 0.000045 due to uncertainty on CC energy smearing, 0.000215 due to uncertainty on EC energy scale and 0.000044 due to uncertainty on EC energy smearing. The overall uncertainty due to energy smearing parameters is 0.000286.

## 9. WEAK MIXING ANGLE MEASUREMENT

---

Another source of systematic uncertainty is the subtraction of backgrounds. Due to the very tight selection cuts on the electrons, the backgrounds are pretty small ( $\sim 0.88\%$  for  $70 < M < 130$  GeV). The uncertainties described in Sect. 6.2 and Sect. 6.3 are included for the final systematic uncertainty calculation, the systematic uncertainty on the extracted  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  due to the backgrounds is found to be 0.00001.

We also considered the uncertainty from full MC samples. To estimate this uncertainty, we split our MC samples into 10 smaller ones, reweighted those 10 smaller samples with 40  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  sets, then extracted  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  for CCCC/CCEC events and both of them. With the extracted  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  values, we fitted them with Gaus, take  $RMS/\sqrt{10}$  as uncertainty, 0.0006 is found for CCCC events, 0.0002 for CCEC events and 0.0002 for both CCCC and CCEC events.

Since only events near the  $Z$ -pole is sensitive to  $\sin^2 \theta_W$ , we also measure  $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.23052 \pm 0.0009$  (Stat.) using events with  $70 < M < 130$  GeV and  $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.23063 \pm 0.0009$  (Stat.) using events with  $81 < M < 105$  GeV.

We also measure  $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.2319 \pm 0.0019$  (Stat.) using CCCC events(0.06 sigma from PYTHIA default) and  $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.2293 \pm 0.0010$  (Stat.)(2.6 sigma from PYTHIA default) using CCEC events. Even though we have similar number of CCCC and CCEC events, the  $A_{FB}$  distribution is more sensitive to  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  for events in CCEC than events in CCCC.

In Ref. [61], the authors estimated the statistical and systematic uncertainties expected in Run II using  $10 \text{ fb}^{-1}$  data. The studies were done based on the performance expected for the Run II  $D\bar{O}$  detector, and is thus very useful to compare the predictions with the results based on data collected by the real detector. Based on their studies, the

### 9.3 Extraction of $\sin^2 \theta_W$ using PYTHIA

estimated  $D\bar{O}$  precision on  $A_{FB}$  achievable with  $10 \text{ fb}^{-1}$  integrated luminosity in electron channel together with uncertainties from this measurement are shown in Tab. 9.1. Based on the statistical uncertainty from the  $4 \text{ fb}^{-1}$  measurement, we expect to have a statistical uncertainty of 0.000567 for  $10 \text{ fb}^{-1}$  of data, which is close to the statistical uncertainty (0.0005) in the pre-Run II studies.

Error source	Estimated $\Delta \sin^2 \theta_W$ using $10 \text{ fb}^{-1}$ simulated events	Measured $\Delta \sin^2 \theta_W$ using $5 \text{ fb}^{-1}$ data
Statistical	0.0005	0.000897
Systematics	0.0001	0.00056
PDF	0.00007	0.00048
EM scale/resolution	0.00007	0.00029
Backgrounds	0.00005	0.00001
Total uncertainty	0.0005	0.00106

Table 9.1: Comparison of **estimated uncertainties** on  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  for an integrated luminosity of  $10 \text{ fb}^{-1}$  taken from the study done in Ref. [61] and the **measured uncertainties** using  $5.0 \text{ fb}^{-1}$  of real data. Both studies are done in electron channel using CCCC and CCEC events. The statistical uncertainties are consistent with each other taken into account the difference of the integrated luminosity. The PDF uncertainty in the pre-Run II studies was estimated before the appearance of the CTEQ6.1M error PDF sets.

## 9. WEAK MIXING ANGLE MEASUREMENT

---

### 9.4 Correction of the extracted $\sin^2 \theta_W$ using ZGRAD

The  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  described in the above section is obtained by comparing the data raw  $A_{FB}$  distribution with the predictions of "measured"  $A_{FB}$  distribution using PYTHIA GEANT MC samples generated with different input  $\sin^2 \theta_W$ . And we need to make the correction for the extracted  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  due to high-order QCD, QED and electroweak corrections.

We first generated about 5M ZGRAD events with input  $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.2317$  and get the generator-level  $A_{FB}$  distribution, then we compare with the  $A_{FB}$  distribution from ZGRAD with PYTHIA  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  templates with  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  from 0.22552 to 0.23722. The best agreement is PYTHIA sample with  $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.2312$ . We correct the final PYTHIA-extracted  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  by  $0.2317 - 0.2312 = 0.0005$  to include higher-order effects.

### 9.5 Final extracted $\sin^2 \theta_W$ value

After using the correction from ZGRAD due to higher-order QCD, QED and electroweak corrections, the final extracted  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  is:  $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.2311 \pm 0.0009(\text{Stat.}) \pm 0.0006(\text{Syst.}) = 0.2311 \pm 0.0010$ .

The uncertainty of this measurement is better than the uncertainty from the NuTeV Collaboration ( $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.22773 \pm 0.0016$ ) [22] and also that of the inclusive hadronic charge asymmetry ( $Q_{FB}^{had}$ ) measurements at LEP ( $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.2324 \pm 0.0012$ ). Our uncertainty is still about seven times worse than the current world average uncertainty  $\sin^2 \theta_W = 0.23152 \pm 0.00014$  [4], but our measurement is sensitive to the couplings of light quarks to  $Z$  bosons, which can not be easily probed at the LEP experiments.

## 9.5 Final extracted $\sin^2 \theta_W$ value

The comparison plot between  $D\bar{O}$   $5fb^{-1}$   $\sin^2 \theta_W$  with other experiments is shown in Fig. 9.6

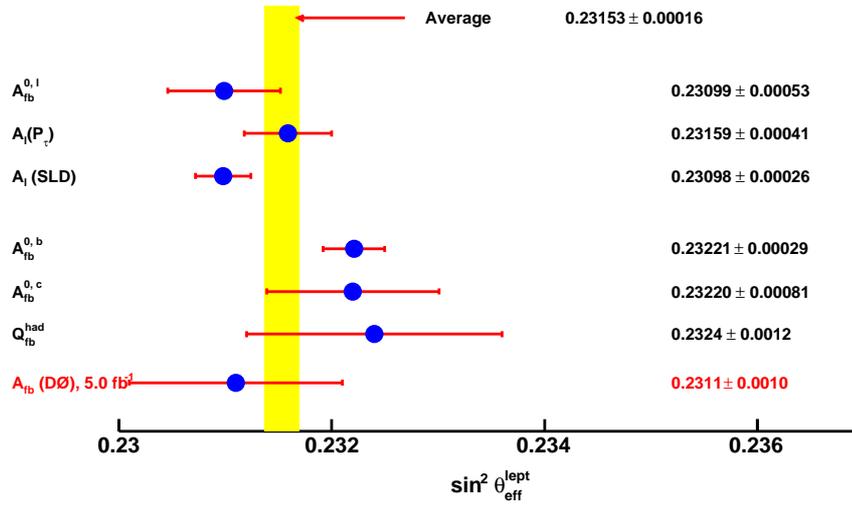


Figure 9.6:  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  comparison between different experiments.

## 9. WEAK MIXING ANGLE MEASUREMENT

---

# Chapter 10

## $Z$ to light *quark* couplings measurement

### 10.1 Extraction method

The LEP/SLD collaborations have measured  $A_{FB}^{eff}$  using processes that only depend on  $Z$ -lepton couplings and processes that also depend on  $Z$ -quark couplings [21]. The  $A_{FB}^{eff}$  results from processes that only depend on  $Z$ -lepton couplings seem to have lower values compared with the results from processes that also depend on  $Z$ -quark couplings. For LEP/SLD experiments, the  $Z$ - $b$  and  $Z$ - $c$  quark couplings can be measured well, while the  $Z$ -light quark couplings were extracted assuming SM relations. The precision from direct measurements of  $Z$ -light quark couplings have poor precision compared with direct measurements of  $Z$ -heavy quark couplings.

The Drell-Yan process ( $u\bar{u}(d\bar{d}) \rightarrow Z/\gamma^* \rightarrow ee$ ) at the Tevatron is directly related with  $Z-u$ ,  $Z-d$  and  $Z-e$  couplings. By comparing the **RAW**  $A_{FB}$  distribution with

## 10. $Z$ TO LIGHT QUARK COUPLINGS MEASUREMENT

---

predictions with different  $Z$ - $u$  and  $Z$ - $d$  couplings in the  $Z$  pole region (70 - 130 GeV), we can determine these couplings. When we change the coupling values to generate the grids file, it will change the coupling values for all up-(or down-) type quarks.

### 10.1.1 RESBOS modifications for the measurement of $Z$ -light quark couplings

There are two files we need to modify in RESBOS: `resbos.f` and `resbosm.f`. In `resbosm.f`, there are the left and right handed couplings of  $Z$  to the up- and down-types quarks and also the charged leptons, we need to translate the vector and axial vector couplings into the left and right couplings. In `resbos.f`, we add four input parameters to allow us to change the couplings ( $g_V^u$ ,  $g_A^u$ ,  $g_V^d$  and  $g_A^d$ ), and another four parameters to control those studies.

With the modified RESBOS, we generate  $16 \times 16$   $g_V^u - g_A^u$  grids with a step size of 0.010 for  $g_V^u$  and a step size of 0.024 for  $g_A^u$  when we study  $Z$  to up-type quark couplings. We generate  $16 \times 16$   $g_V^d - g_A^d$  grids with a step size of 0.024 for  $g_V^d$  and a step size of 0.034 for  $g_A^d$  when we study  $Z$  to down-type quark couplings. 15M RESBOS events are generated for each point.

For the couplings measurement, we compare unfolded  $A_{FB}$  distribution with predicted unfolded  $A_{FB}$  templates using different values of  $Z-u$  and  $Z-d$  couplings. The templates are generated using reweighted PYTHIA events, the generator-level PYTHIA  $M - \cos \theta^*$  distributions are reweighted to agree with the generator-level RESBOS distributions, which are generated with different couplings. The purpose of this reweighting is to make sure we have the higher order QED and electroweak corrections included

for the  $Z/\gamma^*$  boson.

## 10.2 Extraction of couplings

### 10.2.1 Couplings of $Z$ to $u/d$ quark

The measured  $Z-u$  and  $Z-d$  coupling results are shown in Fig. 10.1 using the combined Run IIa and Run IIb  $Z/\gamma^*$  data in  $Z$  mass peak region ( $70 < M_{ee} < 130$  GeV). The best fit results are shown in Tab. 10.1. And the correlation matrices for  $Z$  to  $u/d$  quark couplings are shown in Tab. 10.2 and Tab. 10.3. The systematic uncertainties due to various sources such as energy scale, smearing, efficiency scale factors, backgrounds and PDFs are also shown on these plots.

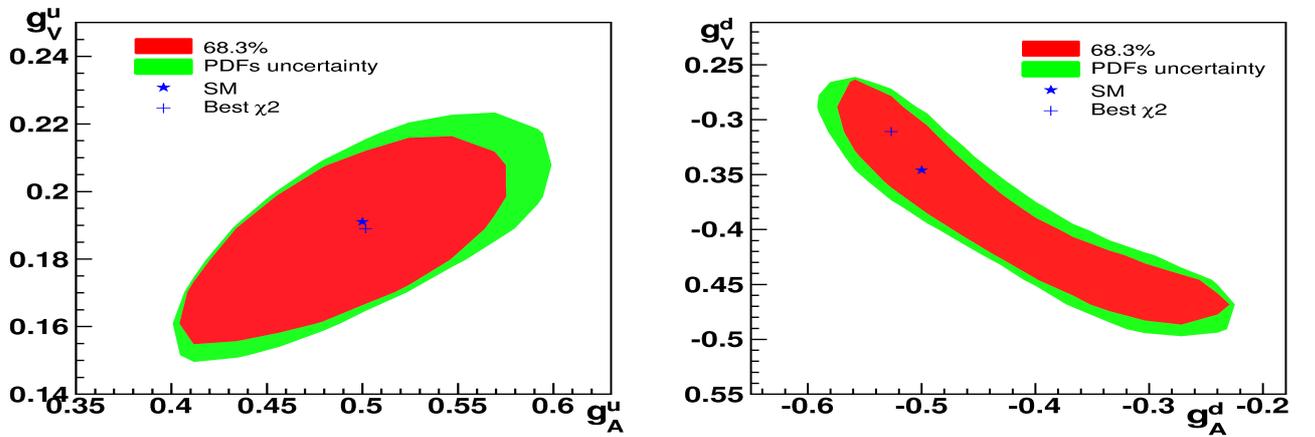


Figure 10.1:  $Z$  to  $u/d$  quark couplings results. The blue star is SM value, the red region is the measured 68.3% confidence level contour due to statistical uncertainty, the green region is the systematic uncertainty, the blue plus is the point with best  $\chi^2$ .

The comparison plots for  $g_A^d - g_V^d$  and  $g_A^u - g_V^u$  results from different experimenters are shown in Fig. 10.2

## 10. $Z$ TO LIGHT QUARK COUPLINGS MEASUREMENT

---

	$g_A^u$	$g_V^u$	$g_A^d$	$g_V^d$
SM	0.500	0.1913	-0.500	-0.3457
measured	$0.502 \pm 0.037$	$0.189 \pm 0.015$	$-0.527 \pm 0.033$	$-0.311 \pm 0.027$

Table 10.1: The measured coupling values compared with SM predictions.

Parameter	Value	Correlations	
		$g_A^u$	$g_V^u$
$g_A^u$	$0.502 \pm 0.037$	1.00	
$g_V^u$	$0.189 \pm 0.015$	0.675	1.00

Table 10.2: Correlation matrix for the  $Z$  to  $u$  quark couplings.

Parameter	Value	Correlations	
		$g_A^d$	$g_V^d$
$g_A^d$	$-0.527 \pm 0.033$	1.00	
$g_V^d$	$-0.311 \pm 0.027$	-0.926	1.00

Table 10.3: Correlation matrix for the  $Z$  to  $d$  quark couplings.

## 10.2 Extraction of couplings

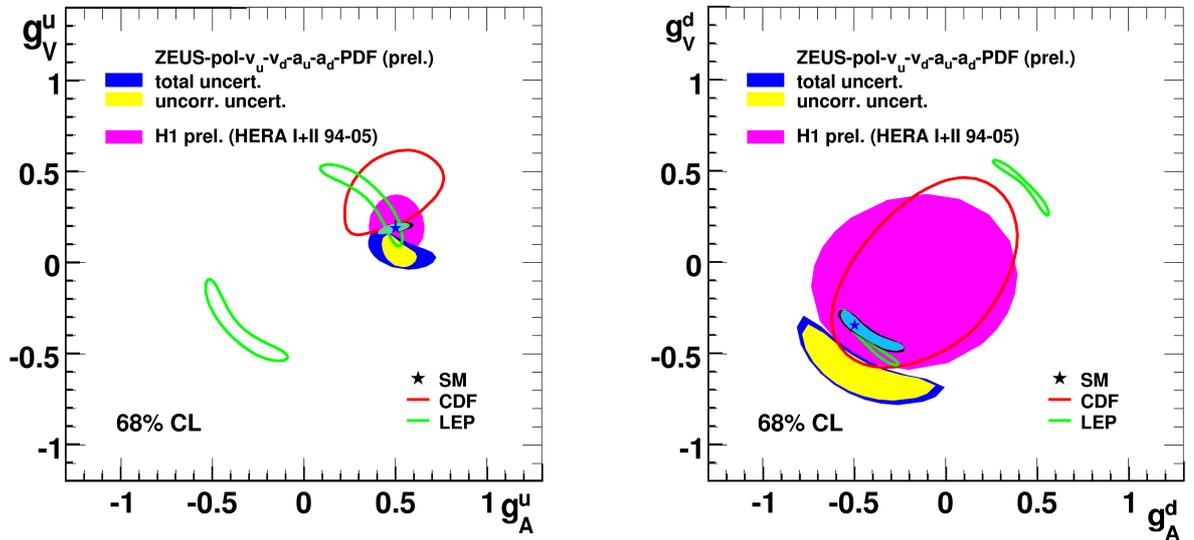


Figure 10.2:  $Z$  to  $u/d$  quark couplings results from  $D\bar{O}$ , CDF, ZEUS, H1 and LEP.

## 10. $Z$ TO LIGHT *QUARK* COUPLINGS MEASUREMENT

---

# Chapter 11

## Differential cross section measurement

### 11.1 Introduction of differential cross section

The differential cross section is calculated by correcting the background-subtracted signal in each Mass bins by the acceptance×efficiency, unfolding correction and integrated luminosity:

$$\frac{d\sigma}{dM} = \frac{N - B}{\varepsilon \times \beta \times L \times \Delta M}$$

where :

- N = number of observed events in bin i
- B = number of estimated background in bin i (including SM and QCD background)
- $\varepsilon$  = total event selection efficiencies in each mass bins

## 11. DIFFERENTIAL CROSS SECTION MEASUREMENT

---

- $\beta$  = unfolding correction factor for acceptance, detector resolution in each mass bins
- $L$  = integrated luminosity
- $\Delta M$  = bin width of each bins

### 11.2 Theoretical prediction

With PYTHIA generator and mass depended k-factor, the prediction is shown in Fig. 11.1

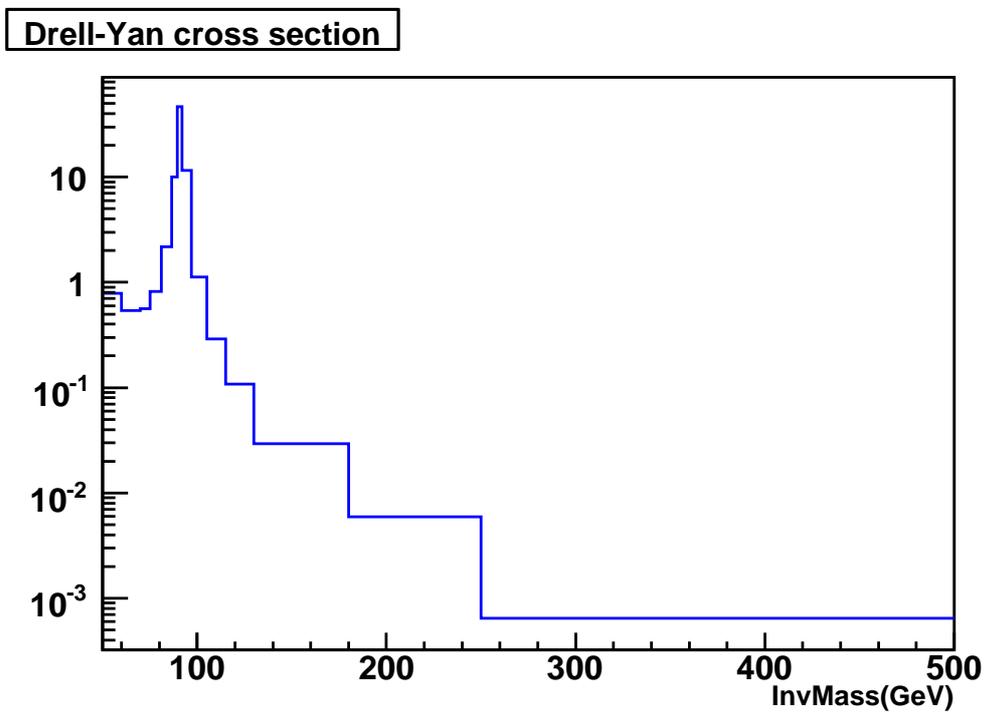


Figure 11.1: PYTHIA prediction(with k-factor) differential cross section( $d\sigma/dM$ ).

## 11.3 Unfolding

In order to get the  $\frac{d\sigma}{dM}$  distribution, we measured the  $\varepsilon \times \beta$  from full MC, which are shown in Fig. 11.2 and Tab. 11.1 and unfold the raw InvMass distribution into the generator level one. The  $\frac{1}{\sigma} \times \frac{d\sigma}{dM}$  for CCCC, CCEC and CCCC/CCEC are shown in Fig. 11.3.

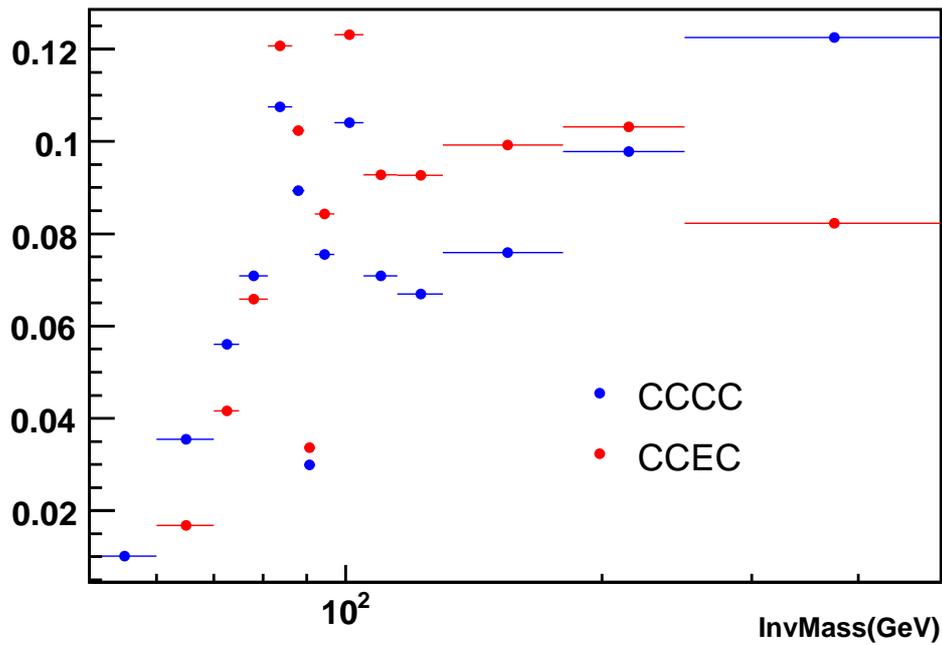


Figure 11.2:  $\varepsilon \times \beta$  distribution for CCCC and CCEC events.

## 11. DIFFERENTIAL CROSS SECTION MEASUREMENT

---

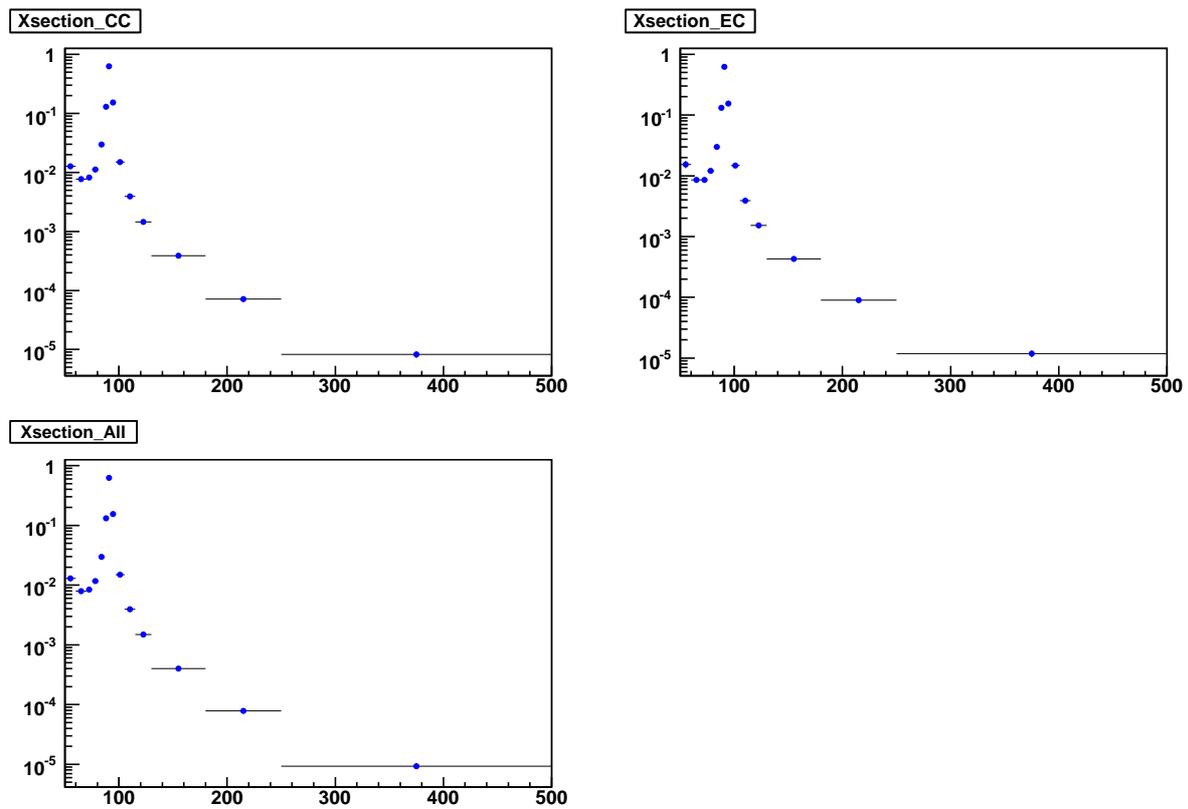


Figure 11.3: Measured normalized differential cross section ( $\frac{1}{\sigma} \times \frac{d\sigma}{dM}$ ) for CCCC, CCEC and both CCCC and CCEC events.

Mass Range (GeV)	CC-CC	CC-EC
$50.0 < M_{ee} < 60.0$	$0.010 \pm 0.000$	$0.001 \pm 0.000$
$60.0 < M_{ee} < 70.0$	$0.036 \pm 0.000$	$0.017 \pm 0.000$
$70.0 < M_{ee} < 75.0$	$0.056 \pm 0.001$	$0.042 \pm 0.000$
$75.0 < M_{ee} < 81.0$	$0.071 \pm 0.000$	$0.066 \pm 0.000$
$81.0 < M_{ee} < 86.5$	$0.107 \pm 0.000$	$0.121 \pm 0.000$
$86.5 < M_{ee} < 89.5$	$0.089 \pm 0.000$	$0.102 \pm 0.000$
$89.5 < M_{ee} < 92.0$	$0.030 \pm 0.000$	$0.034 \pm 0.000$
$92.0 < M_{ee} < 97.0$	$0.075 \pm 0.000$	$0.084 \pm 0.000$
$97.0 < M_{ee} < 105.0$	$0.104 \pm 0.000$	$0.123 \pm 0.000$
$105.0 < M_{ee} < 115.0$	$0.071 \pm 0.001$	$0.093 \pm 0.001$
$115.0 < M_{ee} < 130.0$	$0.067 \pm 0.001$	$0.093 \pm 0.001$
$130.0 < M_{ee} < 180.0$	$0.076 \pm 0.000$	$0.099 \pm 0.000$
$180.0 < M_{ee} < 250.0$	$0.098 \pm 0.000$	$0.103 \pm 0.000$
$250.0 < M_{ee} < 500.0$	$0.123 \pm 0.000$	$0.082 \pm 0.000$

 Table 11.1:  $\varepsilon \times \beta$  in different mass bins for CC-CC and CC-EC respectively.

## 11.4 Uncertainties

In this section, we mainly focus on the systematic uncertainties and the statistical uncertainty after error correlations correction.

## 11. DIFFERENTIAL CROSS SECTION MEASUREMENT

---

### 11.4.1 Systematic uncertainty from efficiency scale factors

To get the electron selection cuts uncertainties, we fit each scale factor with a straight line to get errors of scale factor, then shift the scale factor in two directions by  $\pm\sigma$ . We choose the larger one as the EMID uncertainties. The uncertainties from Pre Selection, EMID and TrkMatch are shown in Tab. 11.2, Tab. 11.3 and Tab. 11.4.

### 11.4.2 Systematic uncertainty from energy scale and energy smear

The systematic uncertainties due to electron energy scale is shown in Tab. 11.5, and the uncertainties due to energy smear is shown in Tab. 11.6. Since EC energy scale/smear parameters will not affect the CC-CC events, the corresponding columns are all 0s.

Currently the modeling we used to describe the electron energy is a linear equation:

$$E = \alpha E_0$$

but there is a potential possibility, the electron energy response is non-linearity, which will not has no effect in low mass region, but will have a visible effect in the high mass region. So we used a non-linear equation to describe electron energy:

$$E = \alpha E_0 + \gamma(E_0 - 45)^2$$

More details of  $\alpha$  and  $\gamma$  parameters tuning are shown in Appendix E. And we take the deviations between linearity and non-linearity modeling as uncertainty in each mass bins, which are shown in Tab. 11.7

Mass	CCCC(CC/EC)		CCEC(CC/EC)	
$50.0 < M_{ee} < 60.0$	0.0014	0.0000	0.0009	0.0018
$60.0 < M_{ee} < 70.0$	0.0008	0.0000	0.0005	0.0010
$70.0 < M_{ee} < 75.0$	0.0009	0.0000	0.0005	0.0010
$75.0 < M_{ee} < 81.0$	0.0012	0.0000	0.0007	0.0014
$81.0 < M_{ee} < 86.5$	0.0032	0.0000	0.0017	0.0035
$86.5 < M_{ee} < 89.5$	0.0143	0.0000	0.0073	0.0156
$89.5 < M_{ee} < 92.0$	0.0689	0.0000	0.0342	0.0732
$92.0 < M_{ee} < 97.0$	0.0168	0.0000	0.0085	0.0183
$97.0 < M_{ee} < 105.0$	0.0016	0.0000	0.0008	0.0017
$105.0 < M_{ee} < 115.0$	0.0004	0.0000	0.0002	0.0005
$115.0 < M_{ee} < 130.0$	0.0002	0.0000	0.0001	0.0002
$130.0 < M_{ee} < 180.0$	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000	0.0001
$180.0 < M_{ee} < 250.0$	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000
$250.0 < M_{ee} < 500.0$	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000

Table 11.2: CCCC and CCEC events differential cross section Uncertainties due to CC or EC PreSelection .The systematic shift is tested in two directions(  $+1\sigma$  and  $-1\sigma$  of the each variables, and we choose the larger one.)

### 11.4.3 Systematic uncertainty from PDF

The systematic uncertainty due to PDF is estimated by reweighting the central PDF to 40 CTEQ6.1 error PDF sets, and the PDF uncertainty is calculated using the pre-

## 11. DIFFERENTIAL CROSS SECTION MEASUREMENT

---

Mass	CCCC(CC/EC)		CCEC(CC/EC)	
$50.0 < M_{ee} < 60.0$	0.0026	0.0000	0.0016	0.0035
$60.0 < M_{ee} < 70.0$	0.0016	0.0000	0.0009	0.0019
$70.0 < M_{ee} < 75.0$	0.0017	0.0000	0.0009	0.0019
$75.0 < M_{ee} < 81.0$	0.0023	0.0000	0.0012	0.0027
$81.0 < M_{ee} < 86.5$	0.0060	0.0000	0.0031	0.0067
$86.5 < M_{ee} < 89.5$	0.0266	0.0000	0.0136	0.0298
$89.5 < M_{ee} < 92.0$	0.1281	0.0000	0.0636	0.1392
$92.0 < M_{ee} < 97.0$	0.0313	0.0000	0.0159	0.0347
$97.0 < M_{ee} < 105.0$	0.0031	0.0000	0.0015	0.0033
$105.0 < M_{ee} < 115.0$	0.0008	0.0000	0.0004	0.0009
$115.0 < M_{ee} < 130.0$	0.0003	0.0000	0.0002	0.0003
$130.0 < M_{ee} < 180.0$	0.0001	0.0000	0.0000	0.0001
$180.0 < M_{ee} < 250.0$	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000
$250.0 < M_{ee} < 500.0$	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000

Table 11.3: CCCC and CCEC events differential cross section Uncertainties due to CC or EC EMIDSelection .The systematic shift is tested in two directions(  $+1\sigma$  and  $-1\sigma$  of the each variables, and we choose the larger one.)

scription suggested by CTEQ group:

$$\Delta B^\pm = \sqrt{\sum_{i=1}^{20} (B_i^\pm - B_0)^2} \quad (11.1)$$

Mass	CCCC	CCEC(CC)
$50.0 < M_{ee} < 60.0$	0.0039	0.0023
$60.0 < M_{ee} < 70.0$	0.0023	0.0013
$70.0 < M_{ee} < 75.0$	0.0025	0.0013
$75.0 < M_{ee} < 81.0$	0.0034	0.0018
$81.0 < M_{ee} < 86.5$	0.0090	0.0046
$86.5 < M_{ee} < 89.5$	0.0396	0.0202
$89.5 < M_{ee} < 92.0$	0.1907	0.0947
$92.0 < M_{ee} < 97.0$	0.0465	0.0236
$97.0 < M_{ee} < 105.0$	0.0046	0.0023
$105.0 < M_{ee} < 115.0$	0.0012	0.0006
$115.0 < M_{ee} < 130.0$	0.0004	0.0002
$130.0 < M_{ee} < 180.0$	0.0001	0.0001
$180.0 < M_{ee} < 250.0$	0.0000	0.0000
$250.0 < M_{ee} < 500.0$	0.0000	0.0000

Table 11.4: CCCC and CCEC events differential cross section Uncertainties due to CC or EC TrkMatchSelection .The systematic shift is tested in two directions(  $+1\sigma$  and  $-1\sigma$  of the each variables, and we choose the larger one.)

where  $B_i^\pm$  is the differential cross section measured for PDF error set  $i$  and  $B_0$  is the asymmetry for the central PDF set. This will give asymmetric errors and we decided to use the maximum of positive and negative uncertainties as the final uncertainty. The uncertainty for each bin is listed in Tab. 11.8.

## 11. DIFFERENTIAL CROSS SECTION MEASUREMENT

---

Mass	CCCC(CC/EC)		CCEC(CC/EC)	
$50.0 < M_{ee} < 60.0$	0.0068	0.0000	0.0057	0.0112
$60.0 < M_{ee} < 70.0$	0.0047	0.0000	0.0012	0.0021
$70.0 < M_{ee} < 75.0$	0.0012	0.0000	0.0013	0.0034
$75.0 < M_{ee} < 81.0$	0.0104	0.0000	0.0053	0.0086
$81.0 < M_{ee} < 86.5$	0.0661	0.0000	0.0308	0.0514
$86.5 < M_{ee} < 89.5$	0.2164	0.0000	0.1143	0.1884
$89.5 < M_{ee} < 92.0$	0.2259	0.0000	0.0396	0.0769
$92.0 < M_{ee} < 97.0$	0.2368	0.0000	0.1287	0.2165
$97.0 < M_{ee} < 105.0$	0.0357	0.0000	0.0159	0.0272
$105.0 < M_{ee} < 115.0$	0.0029	0.0000	0.0011	0.0025
$115.0 < M_{ee} < 130.0$	0.0010	0.0000	0.0008	0.0010
$130.0 < M_{ee} < 180.0$	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000
$180.0 < M_{ee} < 250.0$	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000
$250.0 < M_{ee} < 500.0$	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000

Table 11.5: CCCC and CCEC events differential cross section uncertainties due to CC or EC electron energy scale. The systematic shift is tested in two directions(  $+1\sigma$  and  $-1\sigma$  of the each variables, and we choose the larger one.)

### 11.4.4 Systematic uncertainty from FSR

To estimate the uncertainties from Final State Radiation(FSR), we use the method described in AFB( $\mu\mu$ ) note. Reweight events with  $M_{Z_0} - M_{ee} > 1$  GeV by  $\pm 10\%$ , those events's FSR effect will distinguished in the detector. Here,  $M_{Z_0}$  is PYTHIA

Mass	CCCC(CC/EC)		CCEC(CC/EC)	
$50.0 < M_{ee} < 60.0$	0.0056	0.0000	0.0049	0.0069
$60.0 < M_{ee} < 70.0$	0.0019	0.0000	0.0014	0.0007
$70.0 < M_{ee} < 75.0$	0.0010	0.0000	0.0030	0.0005
$75.0 < M_{ee} < 81.0$	0.0074	0.0000	0.0040	0.0051
$81.0 < M_{ee} < 86.5$	0.0642	0.0000	0.0264	0.0306
$86.5 < M_{ee} < 89.5$	0.0337	0.0000	0.0047	0.0043
$89.5 < M_{ee} < 92.0$	0.8616	0.0000	0.4434	0.5196
$92.0 < M_{ee} < 97.0$	0.0475	0.0000	0.0112	0.0081
$97.0 < M_{ee} < 105.0$	0.0341	0.0000	0.0151	0.0175
$105.0 < M_{ee} < 115.0$	0.0011	0.0000	0.0010	0.0012
$115.0 < M_{ee} < 130.0$	0.0002	0.0000	0.0001	0.0002
$130.0 < M_{ee} < 180.0$	0.0001	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000
$180.0 < M_{ee} < 250.0$	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000
$250.0 < M_{ee} < 500.0$	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000

Table 11.6: CCCC and CCEC events differential cross section uncertainties due to CC or EC energy smear. The systematic shift is tested in two directions(  $+1\sigma$  and  $-1\sigma$  of the each variables, and we choose the larger one.)

generator level  $Z0$  mass and  $M_{ee}$  is the generator level invariant mass of the final state diem system. Comparing the reweighted results with non-reweighted results, we take the larger shift as FSR uncertainty. The uncertainty for each bin is listed in Tab. 11.9.

## 11. DIFFERENTIAL CROSS SECTION MEASUREMENT

---

Mass	CCCC	CCEC
$50.0 < M_{ee} < 60.0$	0.0203	0.0111
$60.0 < M_{ee} < 70.0$	0.0015	0.0028
$70.0 < M_{ee} < 75.0$	0.0031	0.0021
$75.0 < M_{ee} < 81.0$	0.0009	0.0053
$81.0 < M_{ee} < 86.5$	0.0044	0.0171
$86.5 < M_{ee} < 89.5$	0.0095	0.0239
$89.5 < M_{ee} < 92.0$	0.1230	0.2276
$92.0 < M_{ee} < 97.0$	0.0025	0.0335
$97.0 < M_{ee} < 105.0$	0.0098	0.0081
$105.0 < M_{ee} < 115.0$	0.0015	0.0011
$115.0 < M_{ee} < 130.0$	0.0011	0.0006
$130.0 < M_{ee} < 180.0$	0.0002	0.0001
$180.0 < M_{ee} < 250.0$	0.0001	0.0001
$250.0 < M_{ee} < 500.0$	0.0000	0.0000

Table 11.7: CCCC and CCEC events differential cross section uncertainties due to Non-linearity energy smear.

### 11.4.5 Systematic uncertainty from background subtraction

The QCD background is the largest background in this analysis, so it is very important to get the uncertainties from QCD. There are two sources of uncertainty due to QCD background, one is the QCD InvMass distribution, another one is the QCD contribution. For the QCD distribution uncertainty, we change the electron shower

Mass region ( $\text{GeV}/c^2$ )	PDF uncertainty
$50.0 < M_{ee} < 60.0$	0.0138
$60.0 < M_{ee} < 70.0$	0.0066
$70.0 < M_{ee} < 75.0$	0.0045
$75.0 < M_{ee} < 81.0$	0.0039
$81.0 < M_{ee} < 86.5$	0.0052
$86.5 < M_{ee} < 89.5$	0.0116
$89.5 < M_{ee} < 92.0$	0.0512
$92.0 < M_{ee} < 97.0$	0.0181
$97.0 < M_{ee} < 105.0$	0.0045
$105.0 < M_{ee} < 115.0$	0.0022
$115.0 < M_{ee} < 130.0$	0.0013
$130.0 < M_{ee} < 180.0$	0.0002
$180.0 < M_{ee} < 250.0$	0.0001
$250.0 < M_{ee} < 500.0$	0.0000

Table 11.8: Systematic uncertainty due to PDF uncertainty.

shape requirements in two directions. The default cuts in this analysis is  $\text{HMx7} > 30$  for CC electrons and  $\text{HMx8} > 40$  for EC electrons, so we use the shape measured from  $\text{HMx7} > 12(\text{CC})/\text{HMx8} > 20(\text{EC})$  and  $\text{HMx7} > 50(\text{CC})/\text{HMx8} > 75(\text{EC})$  to estimate this uncertainty. For the QCD contribution uncertainty, we shift the QCD background contribution by  $\pm 1\sigma$ , and choose the larger one as uncertainty. The uncertainties due to QCD background are listed in Tab. 11.10.

## 11. DIFFERENTIAL CROSS SECTION MEASUREMENT

---

Mass region ( $\text{GeV}/c^2$ )	uncertainty
$50.0 < M_{ee} < 60.0$	0.0044
$60.0 < M_{ee} < 70.0$	0.0019
$70.0 < M_{ee} < 75.0$	0.0012
$75.0 < M_{ee} < 81.0$	0.0011
$81.0 < M_{ee} < 86.5$	0.0012
$86.5 < M_{ee} < 89.5$	0.0001
$89.5 < M_{ee} < 92.0$	0.0110
$92.0 < M_{ee} < 97.0$	0.0062
$97.0 < M_{ee} < 105.0$	0.0016
$105.0 < M_{ee} < 115.0$	0.0006
$115.0 < M_{ee} < 130.0$	0.0004
$130.0 < M_{ee} < 180.0$	0.0000
$180.0 < M_{ee} < 250.0$	0.0000
$250.0 < M_{ee} < 500.0$	0.0000

Table 11.9: Systematic uncertainty due to FSR.

### 11.4.6 Systematic uncertainty due to acceptance method

The unfolding acceptance for each bins are derived from PYTHIA Full MC, have uncertainties come from Full MC statistics. To estimate this uncertainty, we propagate the acceptance uncertainty into  $\frac{d\sigma}{dM}$  uncertainty, which is shown in Tab. 11.11.

Mass	CCCC(Shape/NOR)		CCEC(Shape/NOR)	
$50.0 < M_{ee} < 60.0$	0.0155	0.0065	0.0407	0.0133
$60.0 < M_{ee} < 70.0$	0.0071	0.0033	0.0186	0.0066
$70.0 < M_{ee} < 75.0$	0.0049	0.0018	0.0098	0.0035
$75.0 < M_{ee} < 81.0$	0.0036	0.0012	0.0096	0.0024
$81.0 < M_{ee} < 86.5$	0.0021	0.0006	0.0051	0.0012
$86.5 < M_{ee} < 89.5$	0.0023	0.0006	0.0062	0.0012
$89.5 < M_{ee} < 92.0$	0.0070	0.0017	0.0156	0.0028
$92.0 < M_{ee} < 97.0$	0.0029	0.0005	0.0078	0.0010
$97.0 < M_{ee} < 105.0$	0.0018	0.0003	0.0040	0.0006
$105.0 < M_{ee} < 115.0$	0.0021	0.0003	0.0052	0.0005
$115.0 < M_{ee} < 130.0$	0.0016	0.0002	0.0041	0.0003
$130.0 < M_{ee} < 180.0$	0.0007	0.0001	0.0017	0.0001
$180.0 < M_{ee} < 250.0$	0.0001	0.0000	0.0003	0.0000
$250.0 < M_{ee} < 500.0$	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000	0.0000

Table 11.10: CCCC and CCEC events differential cross section uncertainties due to QCD background shape and normalization.

### 11.4.7 Systematic uncertainty due to full MC statistics

We use about 15M full MC in Z peak region to measure  $\frac{d\sigma}{dM}$ , but still suffers from low statistics in some unfolding matrix bins. To estimate this uncertainty due to statistics of full MC, we divided MC samples into 10 sub-samples and did ten pseudo-experiments. We take the spread of 10  $\frac{d\sigma}{dM}$  for each mass bins and divided by  $\sqrt{10}$  as the uncertainty,

## 11. DIFFERENTIAL CROSS SECTION MEASUREMENT

---

Mass region( $\text{GeV}/c^2$ )	CCCC	CCEC
$50.0 < M_{ee} < 60.0$	0.0069	0.0242
$60.0 < M_{ee} < 70.0$	0.0069	0.0080
$70.0 < M_{ee} < 75.0$	0.0106	0.0072
$75.0 < M_{ee} < 81.0$	0.0118	0.0061
$81.0 < M_{ee} < 86.5$	0.0267	0.0074
$86.5 < M_{ee} < 89.5$	0.0568	0.0222
$89.5 < M_{ee} < 92.0$	0.0450	0.0891
$92.0 < M_{ee} < 97.0$	0.0383	0.0205
$97.0 < M_{ee} < 105.0$	0.0123	0.0042
$105.0 < M_{ee} < 115.0$	0.0035	0.0022
$115.0 < M_{ee} < 130.0$	0.0015	0.0012
$130.0 < M_{ee} < 180.0$	0.0001	0.0001
$180.0 < M_{ee} < 250.0$	0.0000	0.0000
$250.0 < M_{ee} < 500.0$	0.0000	0.0000

Table 11.11: CC-CC and CC-EC events differential cross section uncertainty due to acceptance corrections.

which can be found in Tab. [11.12](#).

Mass	CCCC	CCEC
$50.0 < M_{ee} < 60.0$	0.0080	0.0181
$60.0 < M_{ee} < 70.0$	0.0048	0.0102
$70.0 < M_{ee} < 75.0$	0.0079	0.0075
$75.0 < M_{ee} < 81.0$	0.0065	0.0067
$81.0 < M_{ee} < 86.5$	0.0123	0.0091
$86.5 < M_{ee} < 89.5$	0.0211	0.0162
$89.5 < M_{ee} < 92.0$	0.0426	0.0138
$92.0 < M_{ee} < 97.0$	0.0314	0.0151
$97.0 < M_{ee} < 105.0$	0.0065	0.0032
$105.0 < M_{ee} < 115.0$	0.0037	0.0039
$115.0 < M_{ee} < 130.0$	0.0011	0.0009
$130.0 < M_{ee} < 180.0$	0.0000	0.0001
$180.0 < M_{ee} < 250.0$	0.0000	0.0000
$250.0 < M_{ee} < 500.0$	0.0000	0.0000

Table 11.12: CCCC and CCEC events differential cross section Uncertainties due to statistics of MC sample.

### 11.4.8 Statistical uncertainty after error correlations correction

Due to the migration between mass bins, the statistical uncertainty for  $\frac{d\sigma}{dM}$  derived from the number of events is not suitable one. The correlations between different mass

## 11. DIFFERENTIAL CROSS SECTION MEASUREMENT

---

bins must be considered when calculate the statistical uncertainty. As described in Sec. 11.1, the differential cross section can be calculated like:

$$\begin{aligned} X = \frac{d_\sigma}{d_M} &= \frac{N - B}{\varepsilon \times \beta \times L \times \Delta M} \\ &= \frac{N_{sel}}{R \times L \times \Delta M} \end{aligned}$$

So,

$$\frac{\partial X[i]}{\partial N_{sel}[j]} = \frac{1}{R[i][j] \times L \times \Delta M}$$

the error matrix is:

$$\mathcal{E}[i][j] = \sum_{m=1}^{14} \frac{\partial X[i]}{\partial N_{sel}[m]} \cdot \frac{\partial X[j]}{\partial N_{sel}[m]} \cdot (\Delta N_{sel}[m])^2$$

the correlation matrix is:

$$\mathcal{C}[i][j] = \frac{\mathcal{E}[i][j]}{\sqrt{\mathcal{E}[i][i] \times \mathcal{E}[j][j]}}$$

The statistical uncertainties after correlation corrections for each mass bins are shown in Tab. 11.13. The correlation matrices for CCCC and CCEC events are shown in Appendix C.

### 11.4.9 Uncertainties distribution

The statistics and systematic uncertainties of CCCC and CCEC events are compared in Fig. 11.4.

## 11.5 Final results

Final results of normalized differential cross section measured from RunIIb 3.9  $fb^{-1}$  are shown below: The final differential cross section of  $p\bar{p} \rightarrow Z/\gamma^* \rightarrow e^+e^-$  are shown

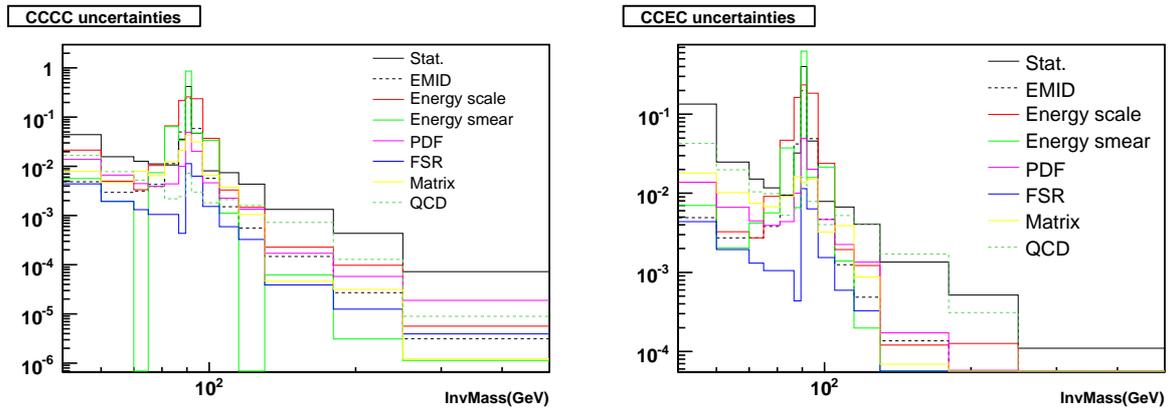


Figure 11.4: Comparison between statistics and all systematic uncertainties described in Chapter 13.

in Tab. 11.13.

## 11. DIFFERENTIAL CROSS SECTION MEASUREMENT

$M_{ee}$ (GeV)	Prediction		$\frac{1}{\sigma} \times \frac{d\sigma}{dM}$
	PYTHIA	NLO	
$50.0 < M_{ee} < 60.0$	0.0109	0.0105	$0.0129 \pm 0.0005 \pm 0.0004$
$60.0 < M_{ee} < 70.0$	0.0073	0.0072	$0.0079 \pm 0.0002 \pm 0.0002$
$70.0 < M_{ee} < 75.0$	0.0076	0.0075	$0.0084 \pm 0.0001 \pm 0.0002$
$75.0 < M_{ee} < 81.0$	0.0110	0.0109	$0.0117 \pm 0.0001 \pm 0.0002$
$81.0 < M_{ee} < 86.5$	0.0293	0.0291	$0.0298 \pm 0.0001 \pm 0.0008$
$86.5 < M_{ee} < 89.5$	0.1342	0.1340	$0.1313 \pm 0.0003 \pm 0.0021$
$89.5 < M_{ee} < 92.0$	0.6249	0.6254	$0.6232 \pm 0.0037 \pm 0.0075$
$92.0 < M_{ee} < 97.0$	0.1543	0.1547	$0.1540 \pm 0.0004 \pm 0.0023$
$97.0 < M_{ee} < 105.0$	0.0149	0.0150	$0.0149 \pm 0.0001 \pm 0.0004$
$105.0 < M_{ee} < 115.0$	0.0038	0.0039	$0.0039 \pm 0.0001 \pm 0.0001$
$115.0 < M_{ee} < 130.0(\times 10^{-3})$	1.4118	1.4383	$1.4846 \pm 0.0380 \pm 0.0362$
$130.0 < M_{ee} < 180.0(\times 10^{-3})$	0.3811	0.3920	$0.4007 \pm 0.0122 \pm 0.0094$
$180.0 < M_{ee} < 250.0(\times 10^{-3})$	0.0757	0.0786	$0.0781 \pm 0.0043 \pm 0.0021$
$250.0 < M_{ee} < 500.0(\times 10^{-3})$	0.0083	0.0086	$0.0093 \pm 0.0008 \pm 0.0003$

Table 11.13: The first column shows the bin size. The second and third columns show the  $\frac{1}{\sigma} \times \frac{d\sigma}{dM}$  predictions from PYTHIA and NLO generator ZGRAD2. The third column is the measured  $\frac{1}{\sigma} \times \frac{d\sigma}{dM}$ ; the first uncertainty is statistical, the second is systematic.

# Chapter 12

## Conclusion

We report a measurement of the forward-backward charge asymmetry of electron pairs resulting from the process  $p\bar{p} \rightarrow Z/\gamma^* + X \rightarrow ee + X$ , and we also use the  $A_{FB}$  distribution to extract  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  and  $Z$ -light quark couplings. The overall uncertainty on the measured  $\sin^2 \theta_W$  is smaller than the combined uncertainty from LEP measurements of the inclusive hadronic charge asymmetry. And our uncertainty is also close to the combined uncertainty from LEP and SLD  $A_{FB}$  measurements using  $c$  quark. With 8-10  $\text{fb}^{-1}$  data, combine both electron and  $\mu$  channel with CDF, the expected precision will be comparable with the current world average value. The  $Z$  to light quark couplings determined using the unfolded  $A_{FB}$  distribution represent the world's most precise direct measurements of those parameters. We also present the first Run II measurement of the normalized differential cross section measurement for  $p\bar{p} \rightarrow Z/\gamma^* \rightarrow e^+e^-$  events.

## 12. CONCLUSION

---

# Appendix A

## Luminosity reweight and vertex reweight

### A.1 Luminosity reweight

GEANT MC simulation and real data have different instantaneous luminosity profile. We reweighted the instantaneous luminosity distribution on GEANT MC to remove agree with that in real data. The instantaneous luminosity distributions before and after reweighting are shown in Fig. [A.1](#)

### A.2 Vertex reweight

The primary vertex distribution in data and GEANT MC is different, we need to do vertex reweighting to remove this effect. The primary vertex distribution before and after reweighting is shown in Fig. [A.2](#)

## A. LUMINOSITY REWEIGHT AND VERTEX REWEIGHT

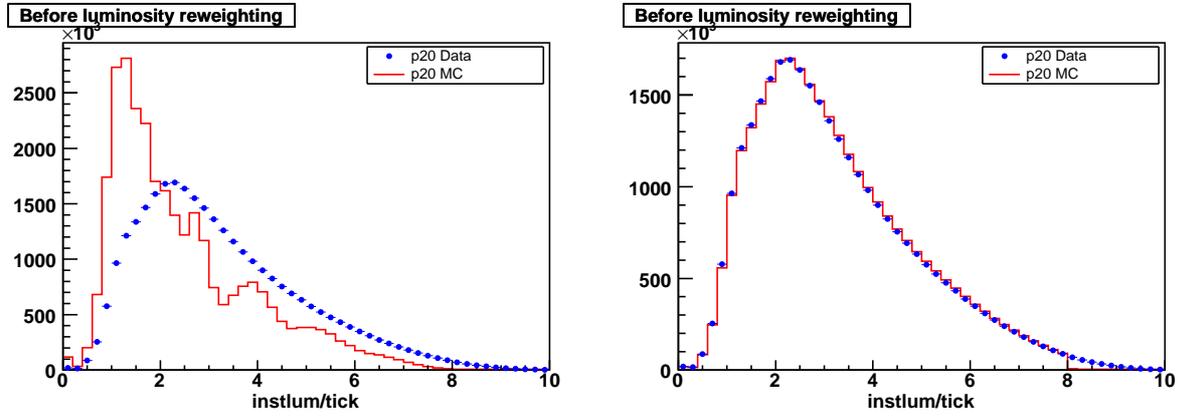


Figure A.1: Comparison of instantaneous luminosity between data and GEANT MC before (Left) and after (Right) luminosity reweighting.

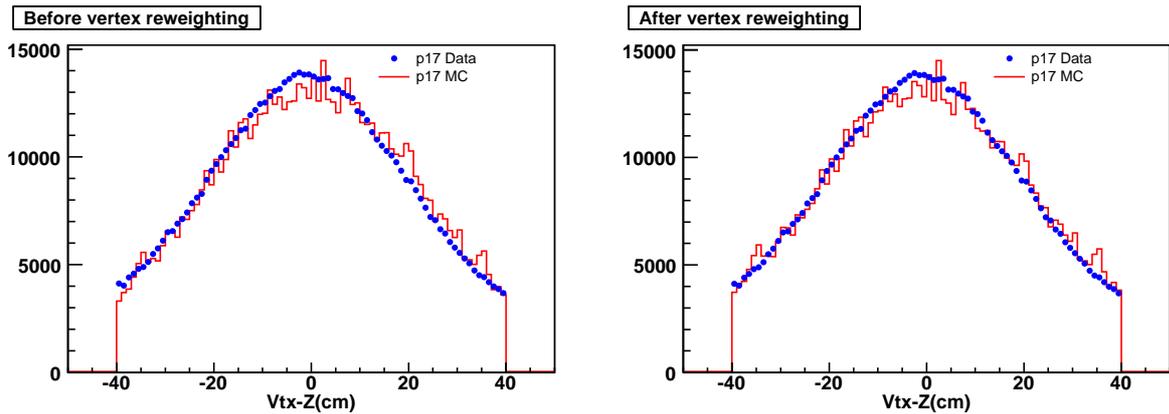


Figure A.2: Comparison of primary vertex distributions between data and GEANT MC before (Left) and after (Right) vertex reweighting.

# Appendix B

## Comparison of $\cos \theta^*$ for each mass bin

### B.1 Collin comparison in each mass bins

We also compare  $\cos \theta^*$  distribution in each mass bin between data and signal+QCD+SM. The CC-CC and CC-EC comparisons are shown from Fig. B.1 to Fig. B.14.

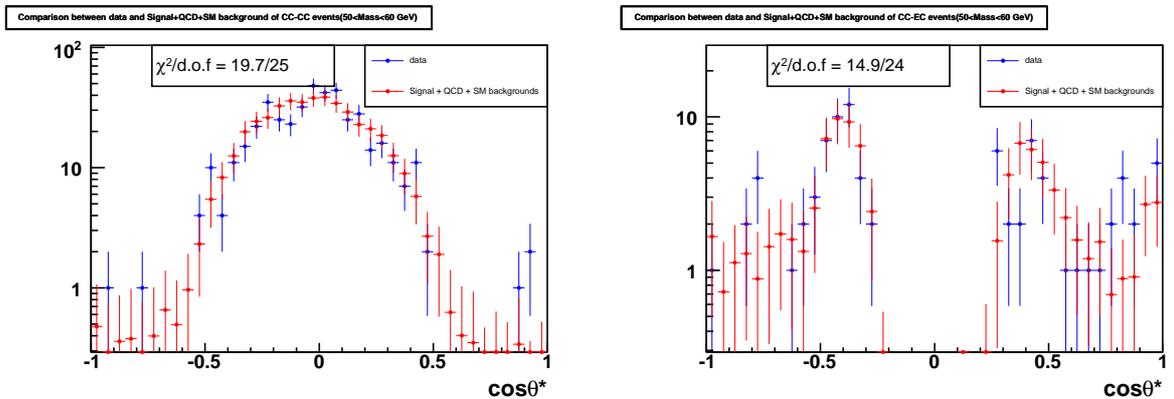


Figure B.1:  $\cos \theta^*$  comparison in mass region (50-60 GeV)

## B. COMPARISON OF $\cos\theta^*$ FOR EACH MASS BIN

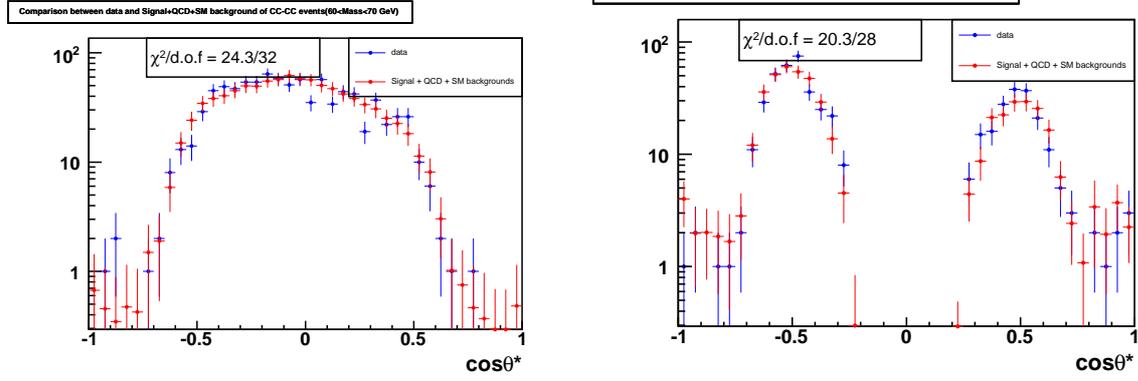


Figure B.2:  $\cos\theta^*$  comparison in mass region (60-70 GeV)

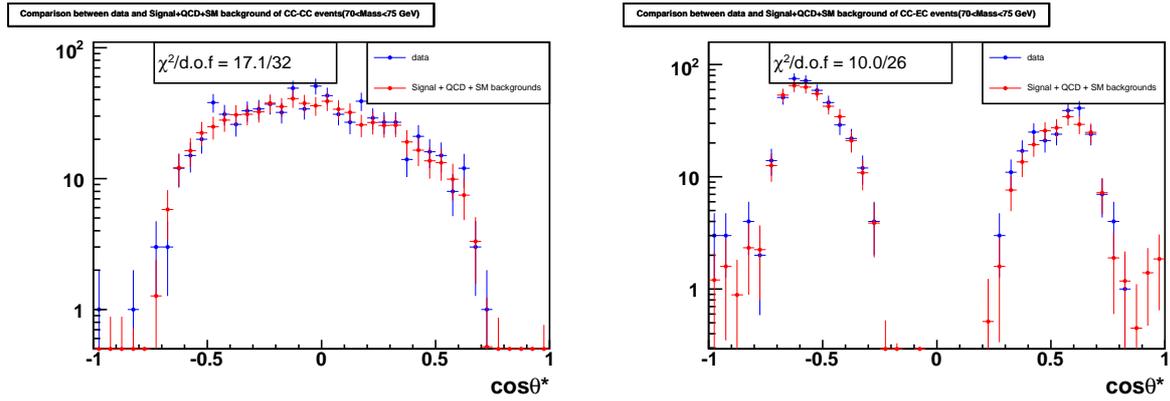


Figure B.3:  $\cos\theta^*$  comparison in mass region (70-75 GeV)

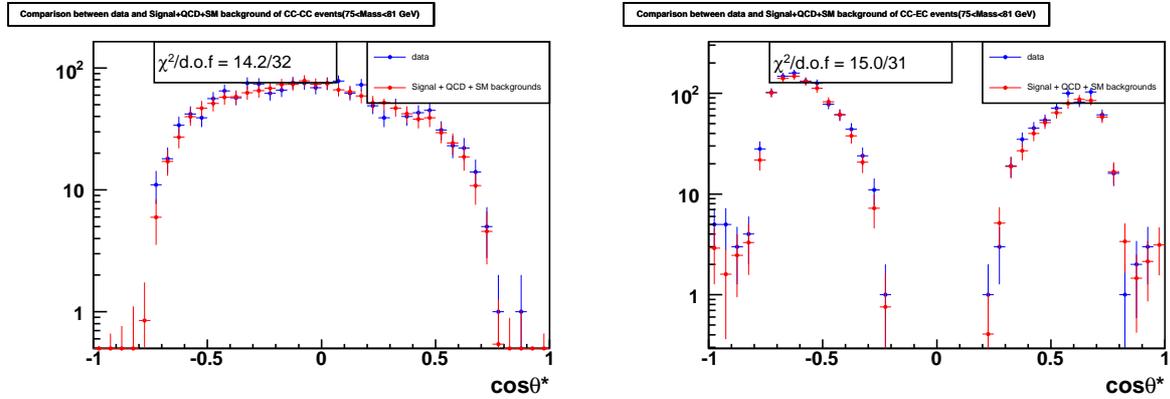


Figure B.4:  $\cos\theta^*$  comparison in mass region (75-81 GeV)

## B.1 Collin comparison in each mass bins

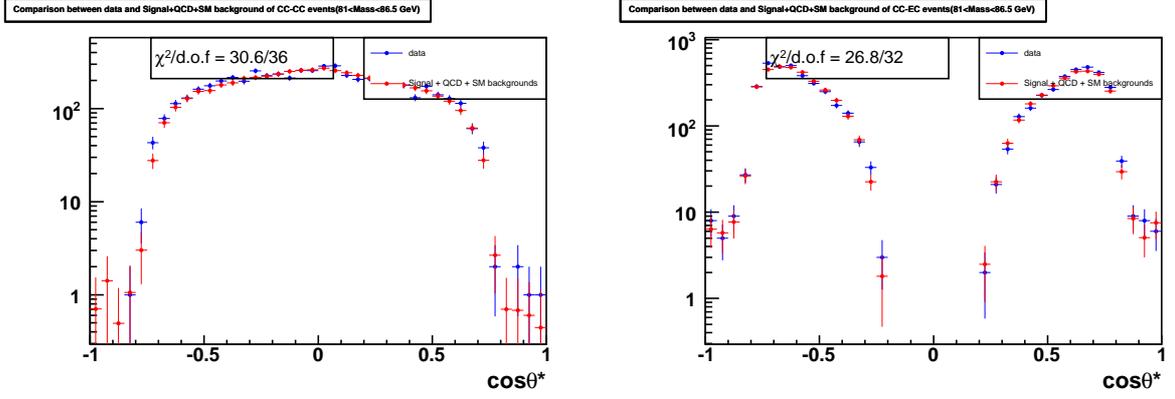


Figure B.5:  $\cos \theta^*$  comparison in mass region (81-86.5 GeV)

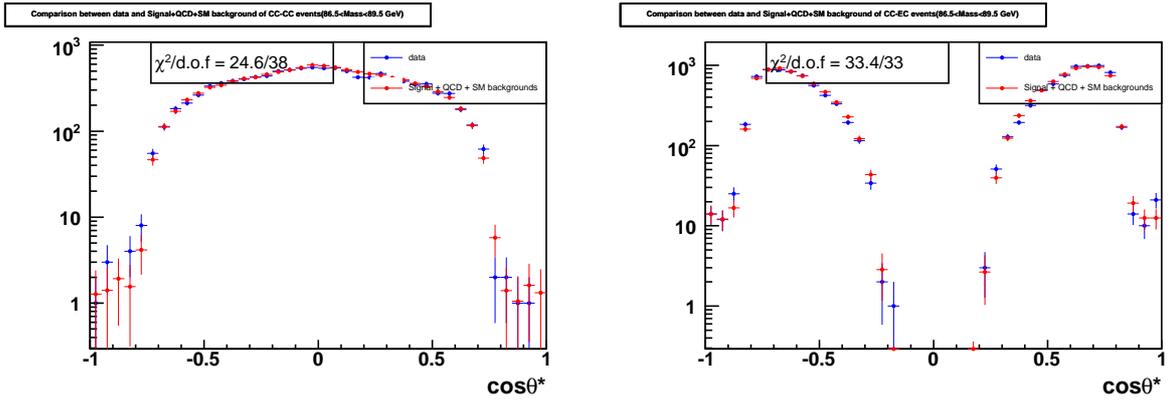


Figure B.6:  $\cos \theta^*$  comparison in mass region (86.5-89.5 GeV)

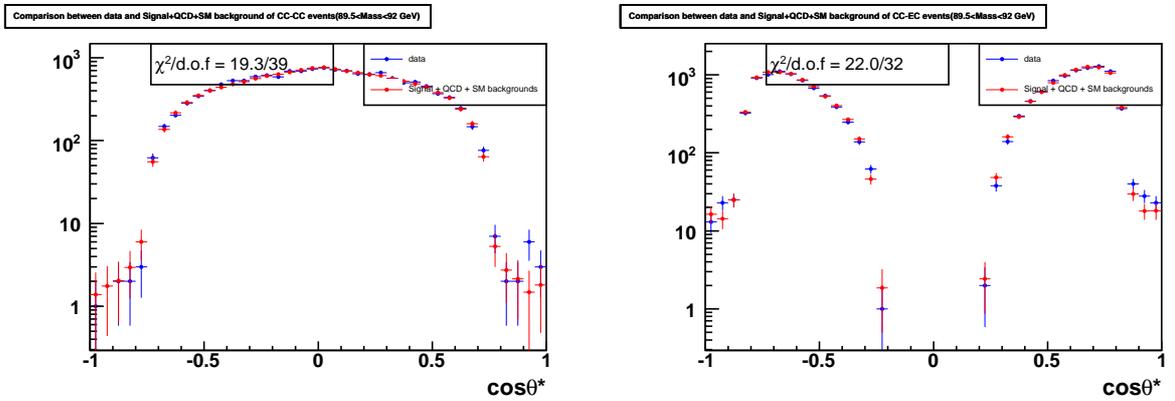


Figure B.7:  $\cos \theta^*$  comparison in mass region (89.5-92 GeV)

## B. COMPARISON OF $\cos\theta^*$ FOR EACH MASS BIN

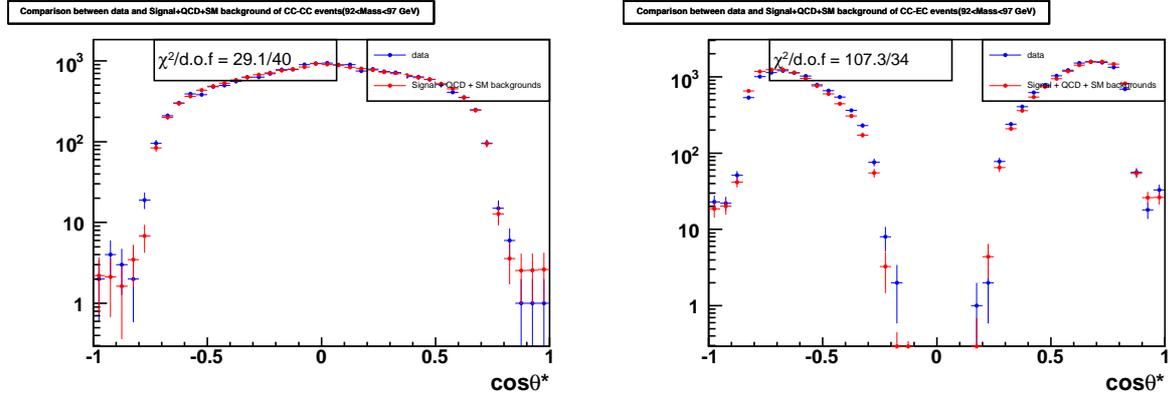


Figure B.8:  $\cos\theta^*$  comparison in mass region (92-97 GeV)

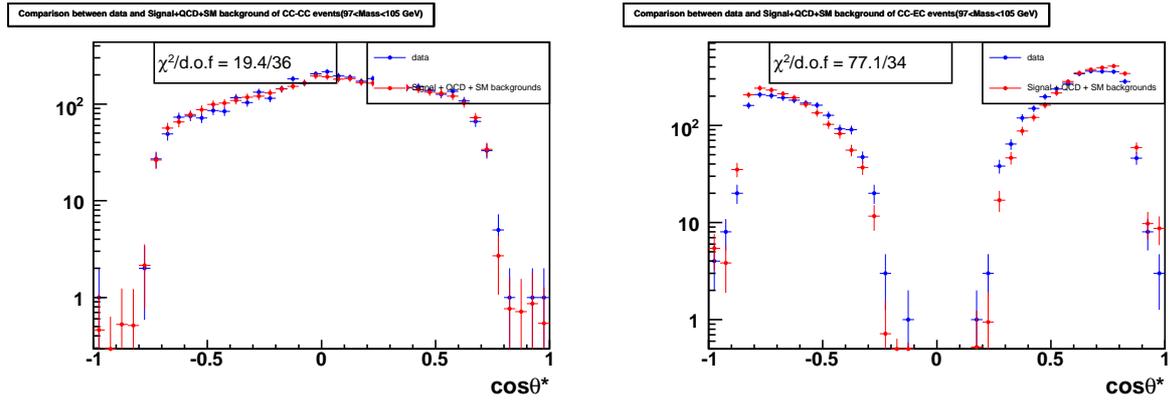


Figure B.9:  $\cos\theta^*$  comparison in mass region (97-105 GeV)

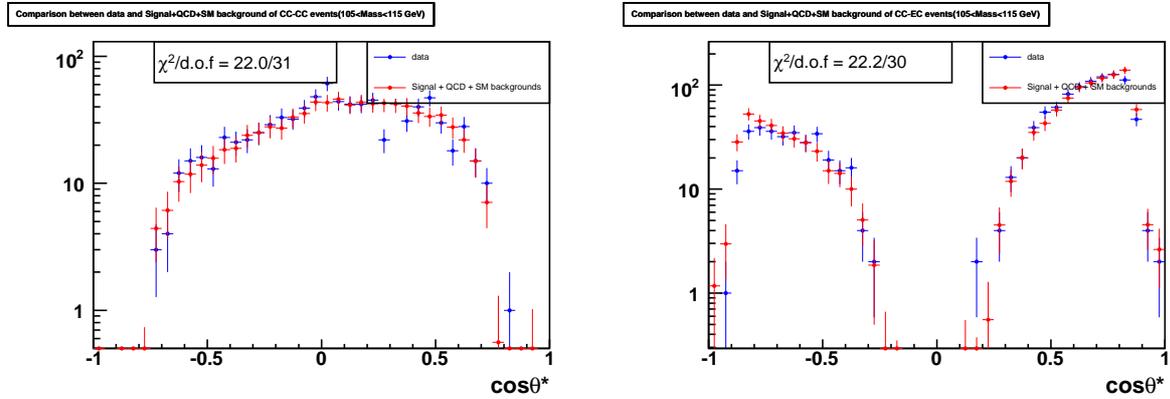


Figure B.10:  $\cos\theta^*$  comparison in mass region (105-115 GeV)

## B.1 Collin comparison in each mass bins

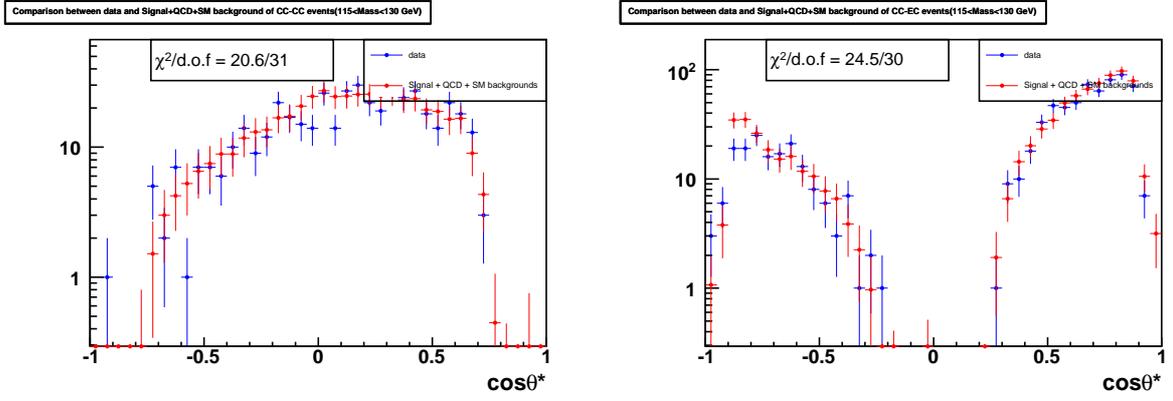


Figure B.11:  $\cos\theta^*$  comparison in mass region (115-130 GeV)

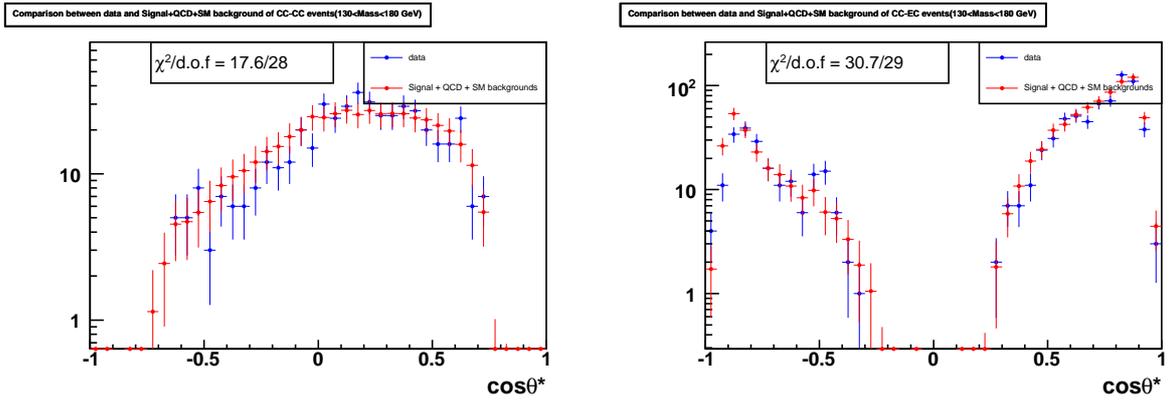


Figure B.12:  $\cos\theta^*$  comparison in mass region (130-180 GeV)

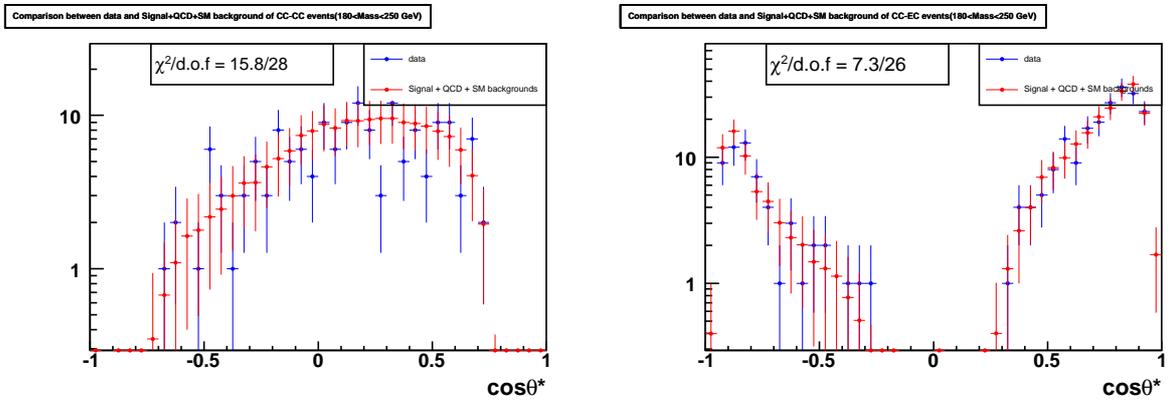


Figure B.13:  $\cos\theta^*$  comparison in mass region (180-250 GeV)

## B. COMPARISON OF $\cos\theta^*$ FOR EACH MASS BIN

---

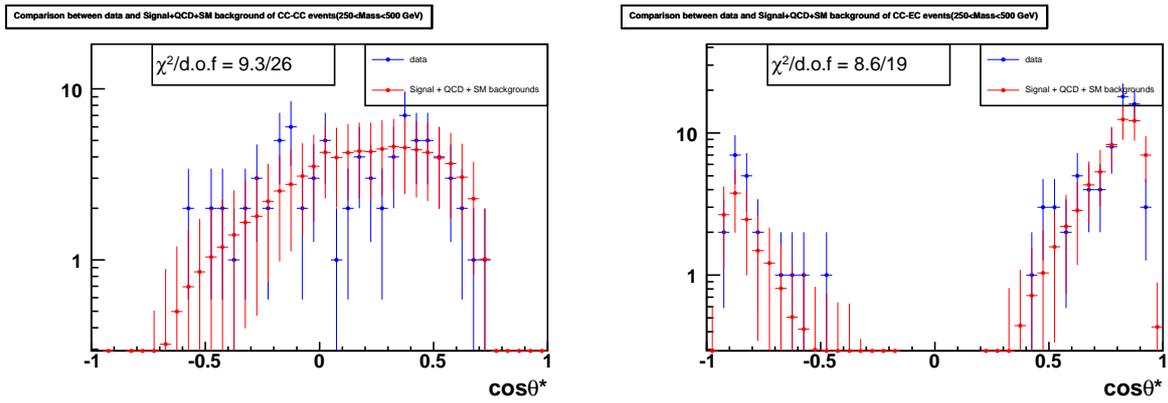


Figure B.14:  $\cos\theta^*$  comparison in mass region (250-500 GeV)

# Appendix C

## Calculation of correlation matrix

### C.1 Correlation matrix

Using numbers of unfolded forward and backward events,  $A_{FB}$  can be calculated as the following:

$$\begin{aligned} A_{FB}[i] &= \frac{N_{unfold2}^F[i] - N_{unfold2}^B[i]}{N_{unfold2}^F[i] + N_{unfold2}^B[i]} \\ &= \frac{\frac{N_{unfold1}^F[i]}{Acc_F[i]} - \frac{N_{unfold1}^B[i]}{Acc_B[i]}}{\frac{N_{unfold1}^F[i]}{Acc_F[i]} + \frac{N_{unfold1}^B[i]}{Acc_B[i]}} \end{aligned}$$

where

- $R_{FF}[i][j], R_{FB}[i][j], R_{BF}[i][j]$  and  $R_{BB}[i][j]$  are elements of the detector response matrices. (Sect. 7.1)
- $Acc_F[i]$  and  $Acc_B[i]$  are  $acc \times eff$  for forward and backward events. (Sect. 7.2)
- $N_{raw}^F$  and  $N_{raw}^B$  are number of raw forward and backward events.
- $N_{unfold1}^F$  and  $N_{unfold1}^B$  are numbers of forward and backward events after detector

## C. CALCULATION OF CORRELATION MATRIX

---

resolution unfolding.

$$N_{unfold1}^F[i] = \sum_j (R_{FF}[i][j] \times N_{raw}^F[j] + R_{FB}[i][j] \times N_{raw}^B[j])$$

$$N_{unfold1}^B[i] = \sum_j (R_{BF}[i][j] \times N_{raw}^F[j] + R_{BB}[i][j] \times N_{raw}^B[j])$$

- $N_{unfold2}^F$  and  $N_{unfold2}^B$  are numbers of forward and backward events after detector

resolution unfolding and acc×eff unfolding.

$$N_{unfold2}^F[i] = \frac{N_{unfold1}^F[i]}{Acc_F[i]}$$

$$N_{unfold2}^B[i] = \frac{N_{unfold1}^B[i]}{Acc_B[i]}$$

The  $A_{FB}$  uncertainty due to the statistical uncertainties on  $N_{raw}^F$  and  $N_{raw}^B$  can be calculated as

$$\Delta A_{FB}[i] = \sqrt{\sum_j \left( \frac{\partial A_{FB}[i]}{\partial N_{raw}^F[j]} \Delta N_{raw}^F[j] \right)^2 + \sum_j \left( \frac{\partial A_{FB}[i]}{\partial N_{raw}^B[j]} \Delta N_{raw}^B[j] \right)^2}$$

where

$$\frac{\partial A_{FB}[i]}{\partial N_{raw}^F[j]} = \frac{-2 \times N_{unfold2}^B[i] \times R_{FF}[i][j]}{Acc_F[i] \times (N_{unfold2}^F[i] + N_{unfold2}^B[i])^2} + \frac{2 \times N_{unfold2}^F[i] \times R_{BF}[i][j]}{Acc_B[i] \times (N_{unfold2}^F[i] + N_{unfold2}^B[i])^2}$$

$$\frac{\partial A_{FB}[i]}{\partial N_{raw}^B[j]} = \frac{-2 \times N_{unfold2}^F[i] \times R_{FB}[i][j]}{Acc_F[i] \times (N_{unfold2}^F[i] + N_{unfold2}^B[i])^2} + \frac{2 \times N_{unfold2}^B[i] \times R_{BB}[i][j]}{Acc_B[i] \times (N_{unfold2}^F[i] + N_{unfold2}^B[i])^2}$$

The error matrix is:

$$\mathcal{E}[i][j] = \sum_{m=1}^{14} \frac{\partial A_{FB}[i]}{\partial N_{raw}^F[m]} \cdot \frac{\partial A_{FB}[j]}{\partial N_{raw}^F[m]} \cdot (\Delta N_{raw}^F[m])^2 + \frac{\partial A_{FB}[i]}{\partial N_{raw}^B[m]} \cdot \frac{\partial A_{FB}[j]}{\partial N_{raw}^B[m]} \cdot (\Delta N_{raw}^B[m])^2$$

and the correlation matrix is

$$\mathcal{C}[i][j] = \mathcal{E}[i][j] / \sqrt{\mathcal{E}[i][i] \times \mathcal{E}[j][j]}$$

We first calculate the error matrix separately for CCCC and CCEC events, then add them together to get the error matrix for both CCCC and CCEC events. Table

## C.1 Correlation matrix

C.1, C.2 and C.3 are correlation matrix table. Plots for correlation matrix are shown in Fig. C.1.

	1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10	11	12	13	14
1	1.00	0.22	0.03	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
2	0.22	1.00	0.35	0.06	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.01	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
3	0.03	0.35	1.00	0.45	0.10	0.04	0.04	0.03	0.01	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
4	0.00	0.06	0.45	1.00	0.48	0.15	0.07	0.04	0.01	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
5	0.00	0.02	0.10	0.48	1.00	0.71	0.31	0.10	0.01	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
6	0.00	0.02	0.04	0.15	0.71	1.00	0.78	0.39	0.03	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
7	0.00	0.02	0.04	0.07	0.31	0.78	1.00	0.80	0.14	0.01	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
8	0.00	0.01	0.03	0.04	0.10	0.39	0.80	1.00	0.48	0.04	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
9	0.00	0.00	0.01	0.01	0.01	0.03	0.14	0.48	1.00	0.35	0.03	0.00	0.00	0.00
10	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.01	0.04	0.35	1.00	0.26	0.01	0.00	0.00
11	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.03	0.26	1.00	0.15	0.00	0.00
12	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.01	0.15	1.00	0.07	0.00
13	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.07	1.00	0.06
14	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.06	1.00

Table C.1: Correlation matrix of CCCC.

## C. CALCULATION OF CORRELATION MATRIX

---

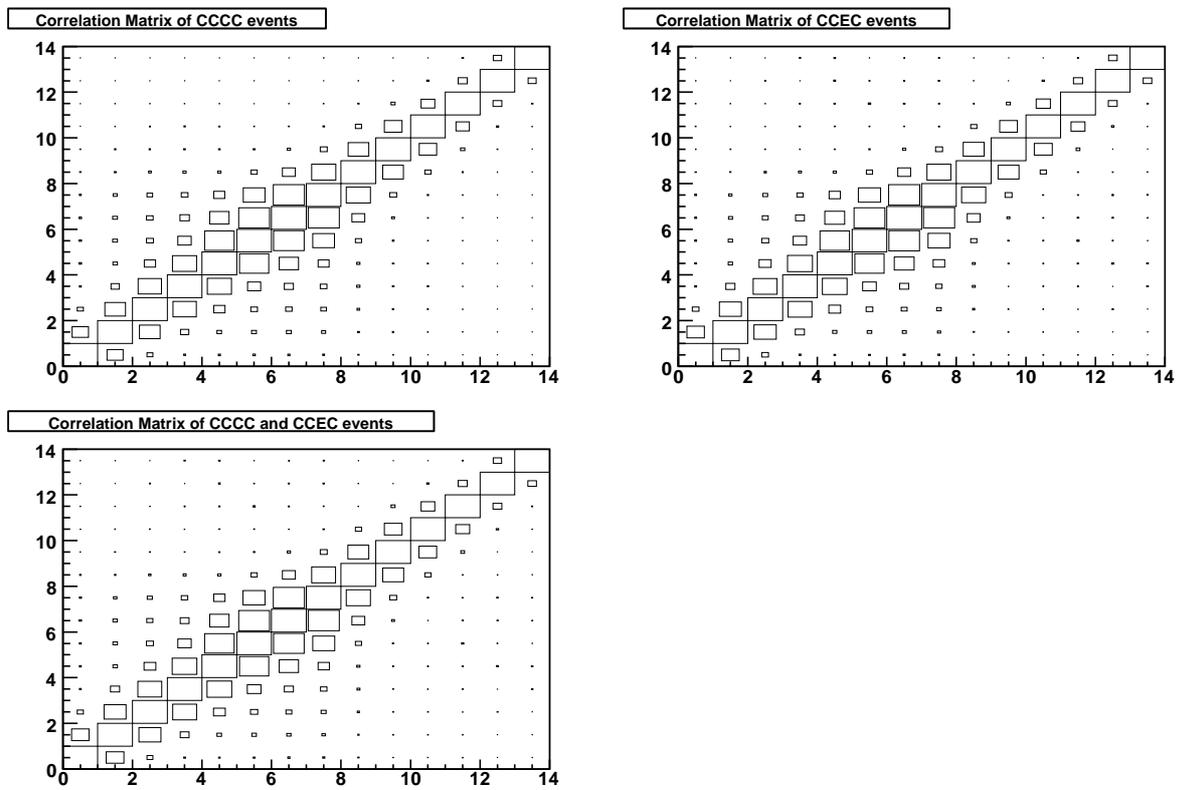


Figure C.1: Correlation matrix for CCCC, CCEC and both of CCCC and CCEC events.

## C.2 $\chi^2$ calculation

	1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10	11	12	13	14
1	1.00	0.26	0.04	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
2	0.26	1.00	0.41	0.07	0.02	0.02	0.01	0.01	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
3	0.04	0.41	1.00	0.47	0.12	0.04	0.03	0.02	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
4	0.00	0.07	0.47	1.00	0.51	0.15	0.07	0.03	0.01	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
5	0.00	0.02	0.12	0.51	1.00	0.72	0.32	0.11	0.01	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
6	0.00	0.02	0.04	0.15	0.72	1.00	0.78	0.40	0.03	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
7	0.00	0.01	0.03	0.07	0.32	0.78	1.00	0.81	0.14	0.01	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
8	0.00	0.01	0.02	0.03	0.11	0.40	0.81	1.00	0.48	0.04	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
9	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.01	0.01	0.03	0.14	0.48	1.00	0.36	0.03	0.00	0.00	0.00
10	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.01	0.04	0.36	1.00	0.26	0.01	0.00	0.00
11	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.03	0.26	1.00	0.16	0.00	0.00
12	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.01	0.16	1.00	0.07	0.00
13	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.07	1.00	0.06
14	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.06	1.00

Table C.2: Correlation matrix of CCEC.

## C.2 $\chi^2$ calculation

To calculate  $\chi^2$  between PYTHIA and data  $A_{FB}$ , we use the following formula:

$$\chi_{raw} = \frac{A_{FB}(Pythia) - A_{FB}(data)}{\sqrt{\sigma_{mc}^2 + \sigma_{data}^2}}$$

$$\chi^2 = \sum_{i,j=1}^{14} \chi_{raw}[i] \times \mathbf{C}^{-1}[i][j] \times \chi_{raw}[j]$$

The correlation matrix for  $d\sigma/dM$  study are shown in Table C.4 and Table C.5.

### C. CALCULATION OF CORRELATION MATRIX

---

	1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10	11	12	13	14
1	1.00	0.25	0.03	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
2	0.25	1.00	0.40	0.07	0.02	0.02	0.01	0.01	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
3	0.03	0.40	1.00	0.47	0.11	0.04	0.03	0.02	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
4	0.00	0.07	0.47	1.00	0.51	0.15	0.07	0.03	0.01	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
5	0.00	0.02	0.11	0.51	1.00	0.72	0.32	0.11	0.01	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
6	0.00	0.02	0.04	0.15	0.72	1.00	0.78	0.40	0.03	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
7	0.00	0.01	0.03	0.07	0.32	0.78	1.00	0.80	0.14	0.01	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
8	0.00	0.01	0.02	0.03	0.11	0.40	0.80	1.00	0.48	0.04	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
9	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.01	0.01	0.03	0.14	0.48	1.00	0.36	0.03	0.00	0.00	0.00
10	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.01	0.04	0.36	1.00	0.26	0.01	0.00	0.00
11	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.03	0.26	1.00	0.16	0.00	0.00
12	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.01	0.16	1.00	0.07	0.00
13	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.07	1.00	0.06
14	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.06	1.00

Table C.3: Correlation matrix of All.

## C.2 $\chi^2$ calculation

	1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10	11	12	13	14
1	1.00	0.23	0.03	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
2	0.23	1.00	0.34	0.06	0.02	0.02	0.02	0.01	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
3	0.03	0.34	1.00	0.45	0.10	0.04	0.03	0.03	0.01	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
4	0.00	0.06	0.45	1.00	0.49	0.15	0.07	0.04	0.01	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
5	0.00	0.02	0.10	0.49	1.00	0.71	0.31	0.10	0.01	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
6	0.00	0.02	0.04	0.15	0.71	1.00	0.78	0.40	0.03	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
7	0.00	0.02	0.03	0.07	0.31	0.78	1.00	0.80	0.14	0.01	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
8	0.00	0.01	0.03	0.04	0.10	0.40	0.80	1.00	0.48	0.04	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
9	0.00	0.00	0.01	0.01	0.01	0.03	0.14	0.48	1.00	0.36	0.03	0.00	0.00	0.00
10	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.01	0.04	0.36	1.00	0.26	0.01	0.00	0.00
11	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.03	0.26	1.00	0.15	0.00	0.00
12	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.01	0.15	1.00	0.07	0.00
13	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.07	1.00	0.06
14	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.06	1.00

Table C.4: Correlation matrix of CCCC for  $d\sigma/dM$ .

### C. CALCULATION OF CORRELATION MATRIX

---

	1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10	11	12	13	14
1	1.00	0.24	0.04	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.01	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
2	0.24	1.00	0.39	0.07	0.02	0.02	0.01	0.01	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
3	0.04	0.39	1.00	0.48	0.12	0.04	0.03	0.02	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
4	0.00	0.07	0.48	1.00	0.51	0.15	0.07	0.03	0.01	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
5	0.00	0.02	0.12	0.51	1.00	0.72	0.32	0.11	0.01	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
6	0.00	0.02	0.04	0.15	0.72	1.00	0.78	0.40	0.03	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
7	0.01	0.01	0.03	0.07	0.32	0.78	1.00	0.81	0.14	0.01	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
8	0.00	0.01	0.02	0.03	0.11	0.40	0.81	1.00	0.48	0.05	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00
9	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.01	0.01	0.03	0.14	0.48	1.00	0.36	0.04	0.00	0.00	0.00
10	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.01	0.05	0.36	1.00	0.28	0.01	0.00	0.00
11	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.04	0.28	1.00	0.16	0.00	0.00
12	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.01	0.16	1.00	0.07	0.00
13	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.07	1.00	0.06
14	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.00	0.06	1.00

Table C.5: Correlation matrix of CCEC for  $d\sigma/dM$ .

# Appendix D

## CCEC events: with or without EC track match

When selecting events, we do not apply any tracking cuts on EC electrons, so CC-EC events can be divided into two parts:

- Notrk: EC electron failed track-match cut
- Trk: EC electron passed track-match cut

where track-match cut is track-match-probability  $P > 0.001$  .

The reason we do not use tracking cuts on EC electron is track-match efficiency is only about 60%. Here, we will prove Notrk and Trk events results are consistence with each other.

## D. CCEC EVENTS: WITH OR WITHOUT EC TRACK MATCH

### D.1 A new EC cuts: trk-iso

RunIIb data was collected with higher instantaneous luminosity than RunIIa data. With high instantaneous luminosity, we expect there is more QCD background contribution in RunIIb than RunIIa, specially for the CC-EC events. Since we already applied very tight selection cuts on CC electron (including track match cut), the high luminosity will only affect CC-EC events. To reduce CC-EC events QCD contribution, we add a new cut on EC region, which is trk-iso cut (Section 4.4). In Fig. D.1, the trk-iso distribution is get from events which passed RunIIa CC-EC selection cuts.

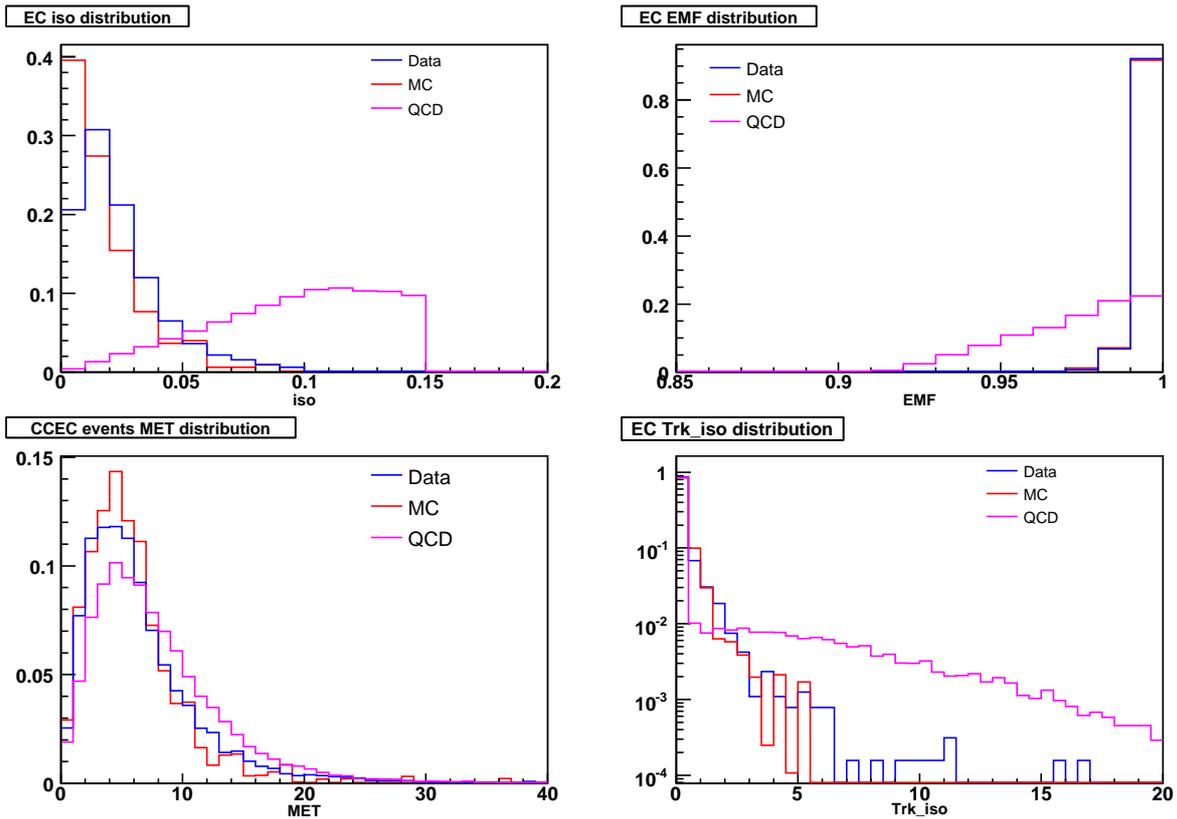


Figure D.1: Comparison of EC isolation, EMF, events MET and trk-iso of data, full MC and QCD background. MET and trk-iso distribution are get from events which passed RunIIa CC-EC selection cuts.

## D.2 QCD shape

In this analysis, we use InvMass distribution of data, signal and QCD with Minuit Fitting method to get fraction of QCD contribution, so QCD contribution is sensitive to QCD shape. Considering poor statistics of Trk QCD sample, in the beginning of this study, we use same QCD shape(just invert HMx cut, without track cut) to study Trk and NoTrk events. In this case, for Trk events, signal+All background can not describe data, specially in high mass region(130-250 GeV). The results can be found in Fig.D.2,

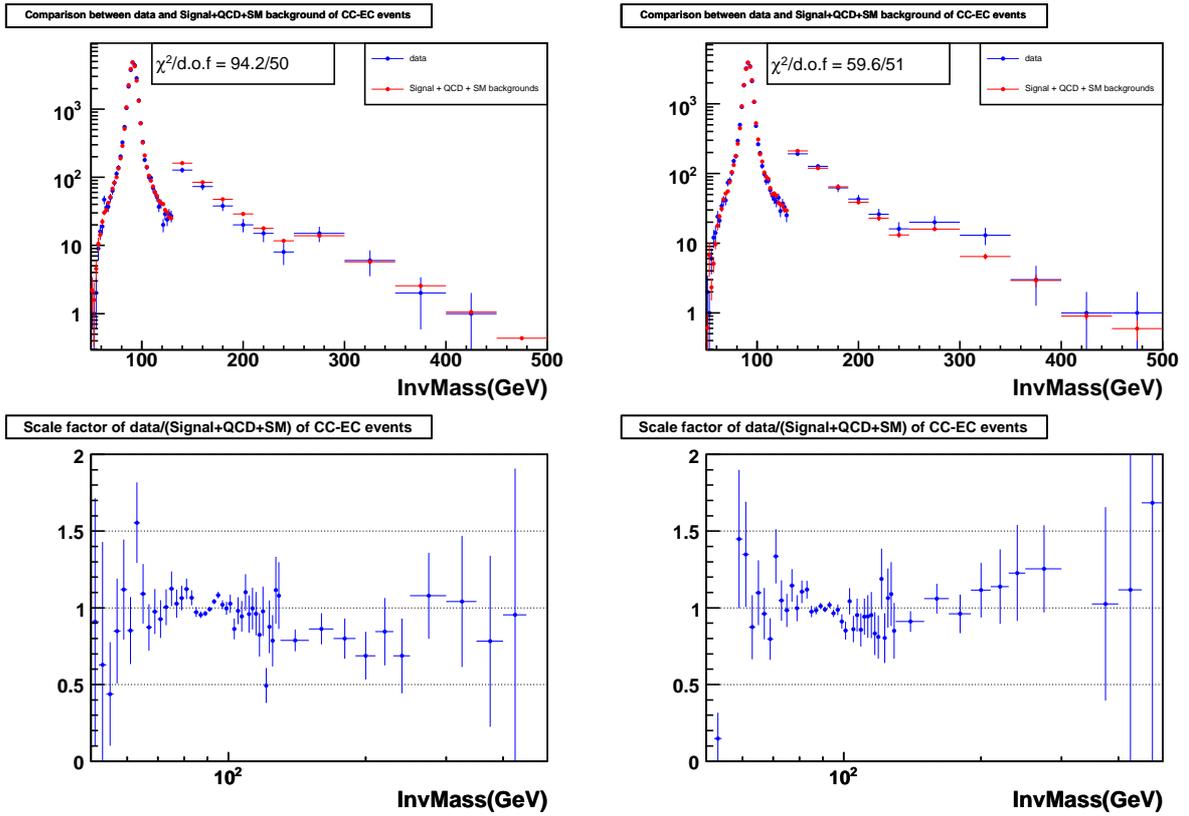


Figure D.2: Invariant mass comparison for CC-EC events and also the ratio between data and signal + backgrounds. Left two plots are results of Trk events, Right two plots are results of NoTrk events.

## D. CCEC EVENTS: WITH OR WITHOUT EC TRACK MATCH

In the end, we also divide our QCD sample into two parts, one is EC electron with track-match, another is EC electron without track-match. Trk and NoTrk QCD shape can be found in Fig.D.3

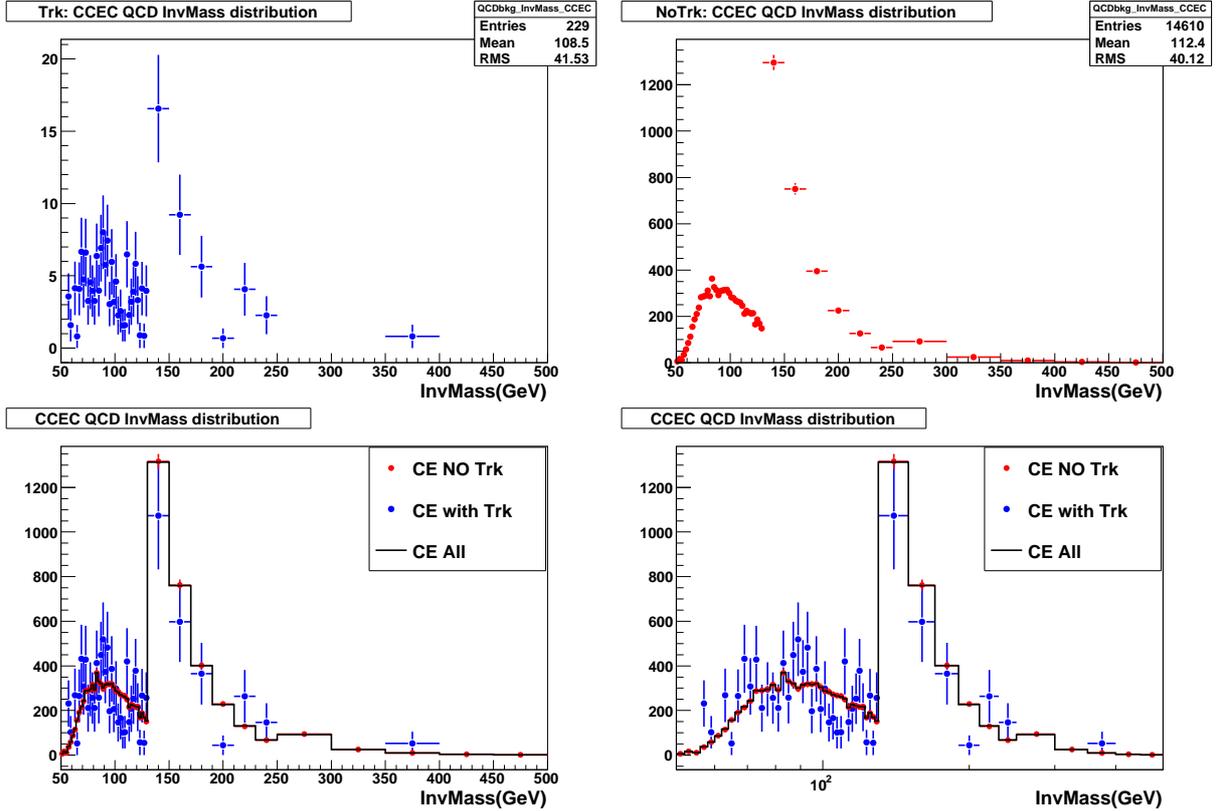


Figure D.3: Top-Left is QCD shape of Trk events; Top-Right is QCD shape of NoTrk events; Bottom-Left is comparison of NoTrk and Trk, both of them are normalized into black line; Bottom-Right is the log scale of Bottom-Left plots.

### D.3 Trk and NoTrk comparison

With QCD shape shown in Fig.D.3, we fit Trk and NoTrk in difference InvMass region. QCD contribution and  $\chi^2$  between data and signal + backgrounds in difference InvMass region are shown in Tab.D.1 and Tab.D.2.

### D.3 Trk and NoTrk comparison

InvMass(GeV)	70-110	70-130	70-150	50-150
qcd contribution	208.2	26.3	-0.96	27.3
$\chi^2$	87.5	60.7	60.2	60.9

Table D.1: Trk events QCD contribution and  $\chi^2$  between data and signal + backgrounds fitted with difference InvMass region.

InvMass(GeV)	70-110	70-130	70-150	50-150
qcd contribution	381.4	364.5	343.9	347.9
$\chi^2$	59.9	56.9	54.5	55.1

Table D.2: NoTrk events QCD contribution and  $\chi^2$  between data and signal + backgrounds fitted with difference InvMass region.

In here, we will use 50-150 GeV fitting results to do some tests. If the fitting results are stable, the QCD contribution of Trk and NoTrk should be consistent with All CC-EC results, the comparison results can be found in Tab.D.3

With the fitting mass region 50-150 GeV, we can get QCD contribution in each mass bin. Using fixed QCD shape and QCD contribution, results of Trk and NoTrk have a reasonable agreement. The InvMass comparison plots are shown in Fig.D.4, raw  $A_{FB}$  and unfolded  $A_{FB}$  comparison plots are shown in Fig.D.5 and comparison between MC  $A_{FB}$  of Trk and NoTrk are shown in Fig.D.6.

## D. CCEC EVENTS: WITH OR WITHOUT EC TRACK MATCH

---

Mass	All	NoTrk	Trk	NoTrk + Trk
50 - 60	4.3	3.7	0.76	4.5
60 - 70	25.4	22.3	2.32	24.6
70 - 75	22.2	19.4	1.81	21.2
75 - 81	29.9	26.3	1.98	28.3
81 - 86.5	30.9	27.2	1.99	29.2
86.5 - 89.5	15.7	13.7	1.49	15.2
89.5 - 92	12.6	11.0	1.21	12.2
92 - 97	26.5	23.2	2.19	25.4
97 - 105	38.6	34.0	1.98	36.0
105 - 115	41.4	36.5	2.01	38.5
115 - 130	47.8	42.0	3.73	45.7
130 - 180	76.2	67.2	4.16	71.4
180 - 250	19.8	17.4	1.52	18.9
250 - 500	4.4	3.9	0.12	4.0

Table D.3: QCD contribution for difference samples in each mass bins. We can see NoTrk+Trk has good agreement with All(Fitted with Mass in 50-150 GeV).

### D.3 Trk and NoTrk comparison

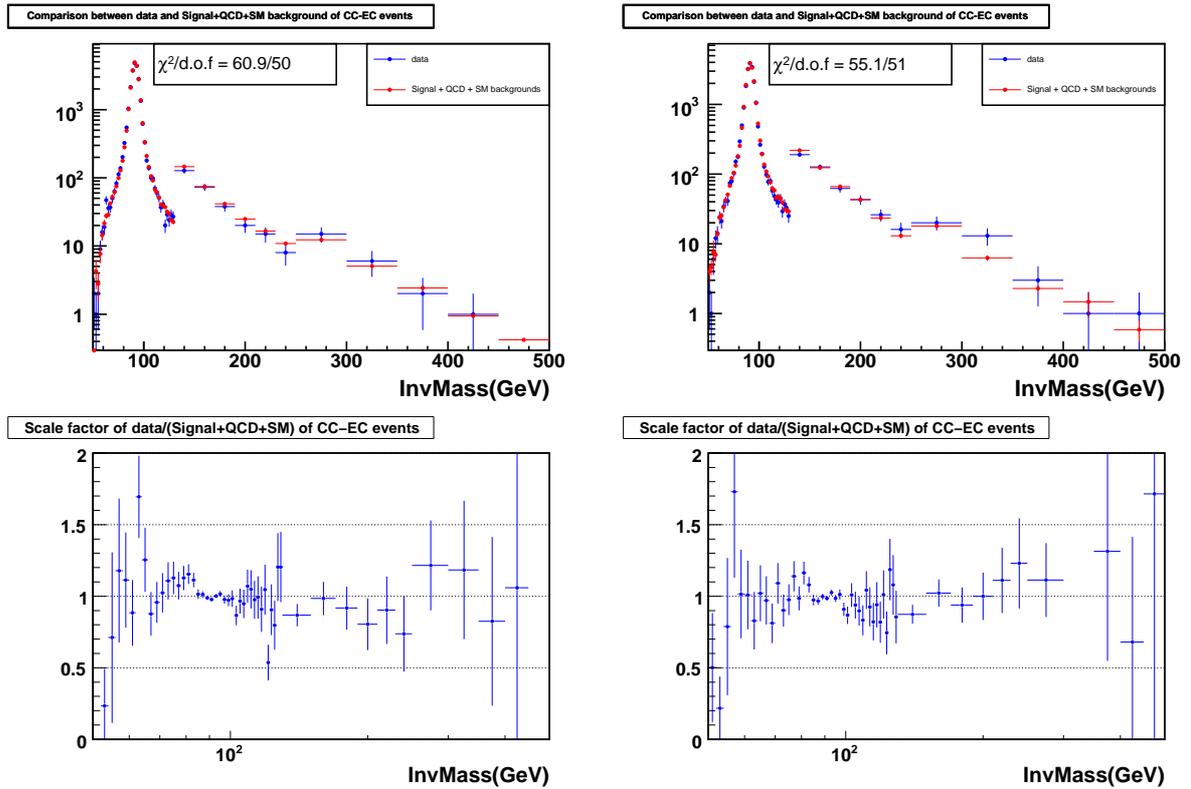


Figure D.4: Invariant mass comparison for CC-EC events and also the ratio between data and signal + backgrounds. Left two plots are results of Trk events, Right two plots are results of NoTrk events.

## D. CCEC EVENTS: WITH OR WITHOUT EC TRACK MATCH

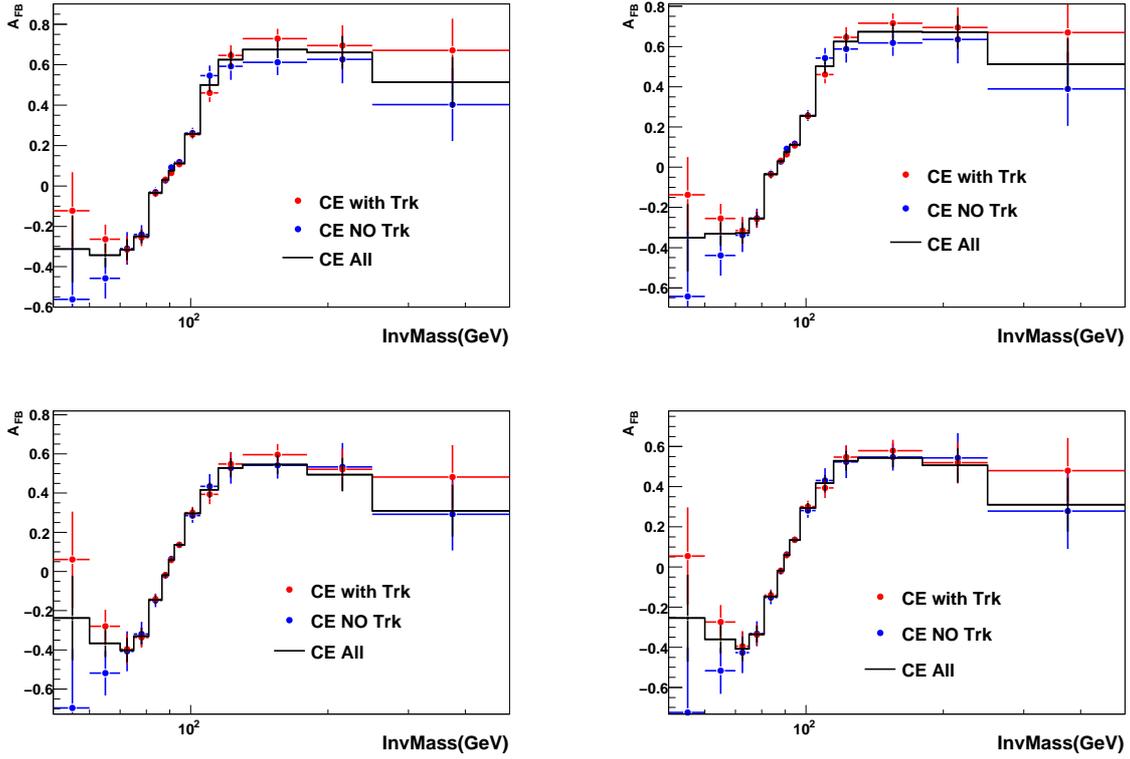


Figure D.5: Top two plots are comparison plots of raw  $A_{FB}$  between Trk, NoTrk and All. Bottom two plots are comparison plots of unfolded  $A_{FB}$  between Trk, NoTrk and All. For  $W + X$  backgrounds contribution, we use both *Pythia* and *Alpgen*  $W + X$  samples, left two plots are results with *Pythia*  $W + X$  samples; right two plots are results with *Alpgen*  $W + X$  samples. There is no big difference between Left and Right plots.

### D.3 Trk and NoTrk comparison

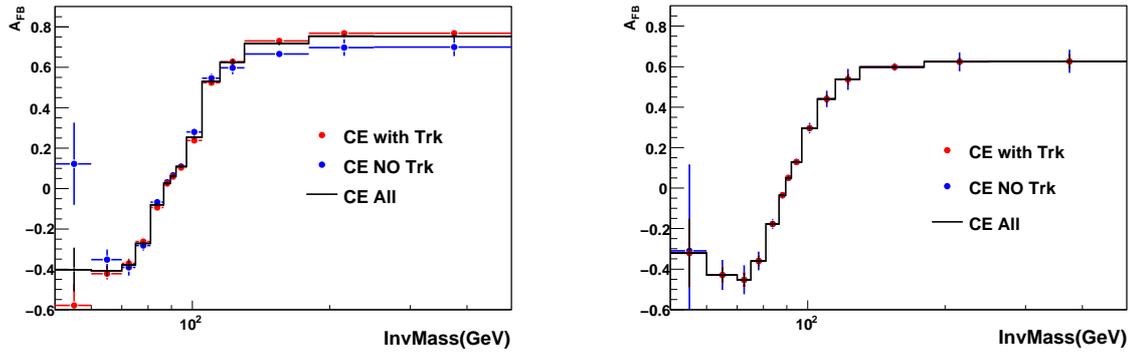


Figure D.6: MC Raw  $A_{FB}$  comparison for CC-EC events. Left plot is raw  $A_{FB}$  comparison, Right plot is unfolded  $A_{FB}$  comparison. The first two mass bins have very poor statistics, difference between data and MC are mainly come from statistics.

**D. CCEC EVENTS: WITH OR WITHOUT EC TRACK MATCH**

---

# Appendix E

## Electron energy modeling

The electron energy-loss corrections have been applied on the measured electron energy from the collider data to reduce the electron energy nonlinearity. We also have reasonable amount of dead material in the full MC simulation that is comparable with what have in the real detector. Previously studies from the  $W$  mass group indicate the electron energy response is pretty linear for electrons with energy below  $\sim 100$  GeV, since we are also interested in high mass Drell-Yan events, we also need to estimate the effect of electron energy non-linearity for the AFB measurement. As described in Sec. 5.3.1, we assume the measured electron energy in real data and the Geant-simulated electron energy have a linear relation  $E' = \alpha \times E_0$ , to investigate the effect of non-linearity, we modify the function to  $E' = \alpha \times E_0 + \gamma(E_0 - 45)^2$ , the parameter  $\gamma$  is introduced to reflect the energy non-linearity and 45 GeV is the average energy of the electrons from  $Z$  decays. We then use the data around the  $Z$  peak region ( $70 < M_{ee} < 110$  GeV with 2 GeV bin width) and compare with the  $M_{ee}$  predictions using different values of  $\alpha$  and  $\gamma$ . We then minimize the  $\chi^2$  between the  $M_{ee}$  distributions from data and Geant

## E. ELECTRON ENERGY MODELING

MC simulation to extract the values of  $\alpha$  and  $\gamma$ .

The best  $\alpha$  and  $\gamma$  values for CC and EC electrons are separately shown in Fig. E.1 and also in Tab. E.1.

To virtually see the effect of  $\gamma$  on the invariant mass distribution, we compared the Geant MC predictions with and without the non-linearity term for both CC-CC and CC-EC events, the comparisons are shown in Fig. E.2 and E.3 to demonstrate agreement in  $Z$  peak mass region and effect in the high mass region.

Another fact is the energy linearity has been well tested for electrons with energy below  $\sim 100$  GeV, according to the above formula, a non-linearity term  $\gamma = 0.0003$  will only change the energy of a 100 GeV electron by 1 GeV, which is small compared with the bin size of 70 GeV and 250 GeV that we have for the two highest invariant mass bins. The effect on the  $A_{FB}$  measurement is further reduced since the energy non-linearity will affect the forward and backward events in the same direction.

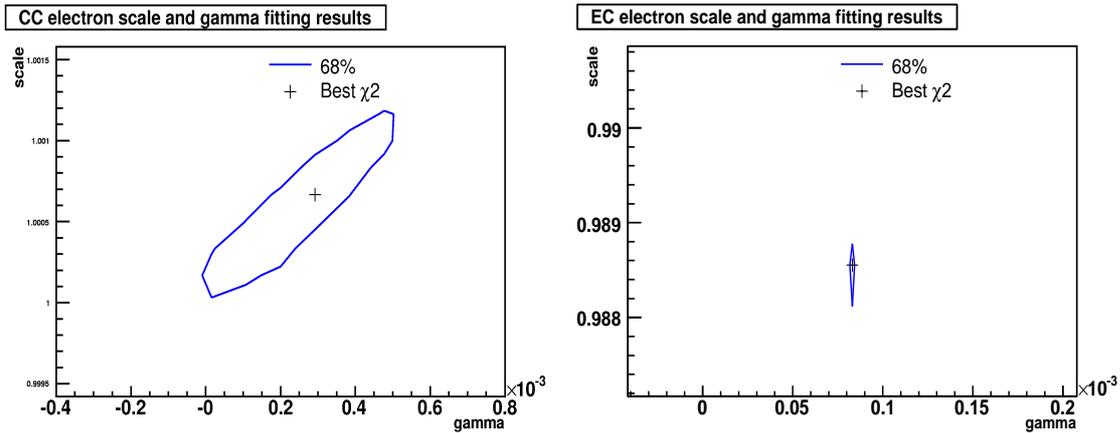


Figure E.1: Electron non-linearity parameters, the black cross corresponds to the best fitted values, the blue contour is 68% contour for  $\alpha$  and  $\gamma$ . The left plot is for CC electron, and the right one is for EC electron.

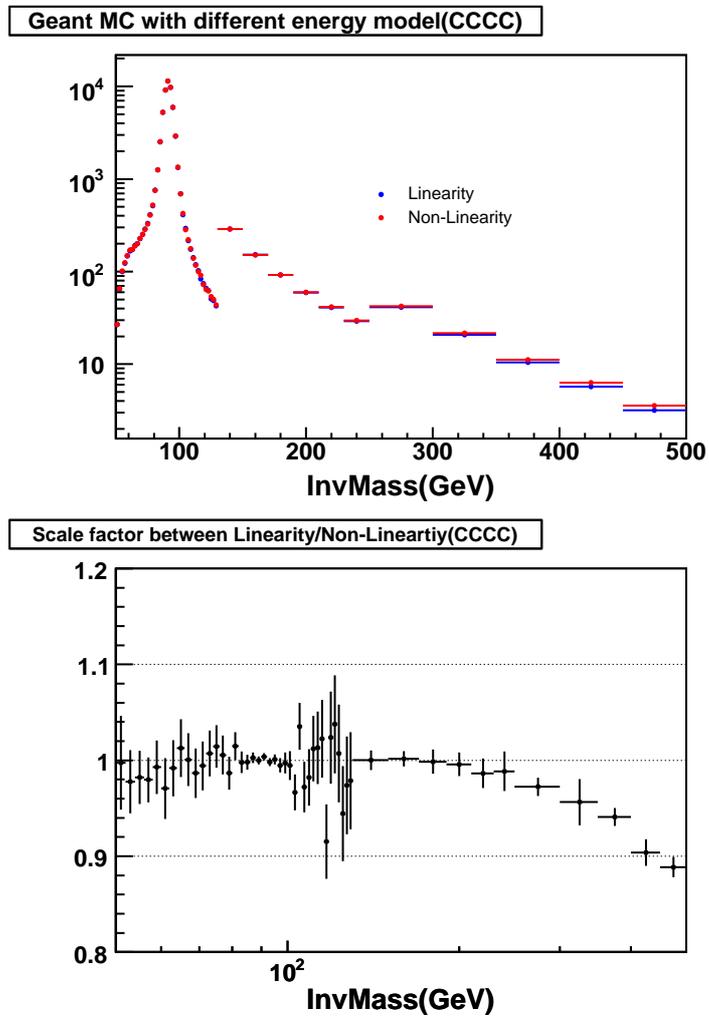


Figure E.2: Linearity and non-linearity energy correction comparison for Geant MC CCCC events. The top plot is InvMass distribution comparison between linearity and non-linearity correction, the bottom plot is the scale factor between linearity InvMass and non-linearity InvMass.

## E. ELECTRON ENERGY MODELING

---

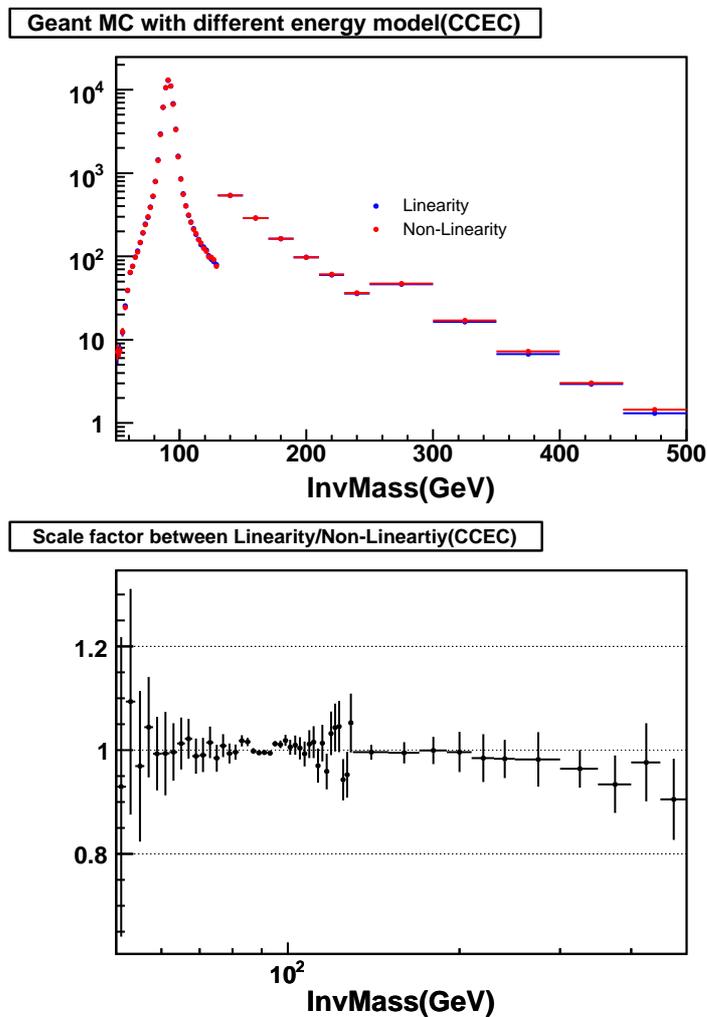


Figure E.3: Linearity and non-linearity energy correction comparison for Geant MC CCEC events. The top plot is Inverse Mass distribution comparison between linearity and non-linearity correction, the bottom plot is the scale factor between linearity Inverse Mass and non-linearity Inverse Mass.

---

	$\alpha$	$\gamma$
CC	$1.00067 \pm 0.00015$	$0.00029 \pm 0.0001$
EC	$0.98855 \pm 0.00036$	$0.000083 \pm 0.0000068$

Table E.1: CC and CC electron non-linearity parameters values.

## E. ELECTRON ENERGY MODELING

---

# References

- [1] S.L. Glashow, Nucl. Phys. **B22** 579 (1961); A. Salam and J.C. Ward, Phys. Rev. Lett. **13** 168 (1964); S. Weinberg, Phys. Rev. Lett. **19** 1264 (1967). [1](#), [5](#)
- [2] M. Gell-Mann, Phys. Lett. **8**, 214 (1964); G. Zweig, CERN preprint TH401 (1964). [1](#)
- [3] D. Karlen, Plenary talk “Experimental Status of the Standard Model” at the International Conference on High Energy Physics, ICHEP98, Cancouver, July 1998. [2](#)
- [4] W.-M. Yao *et al.* (Particle Data Group), J. Phys. G **33**, 1 (2006) and 2007 partial update for the 2008 edition. [2](#), [166](#)
- [5] B.W. Le and J. Zinn-Justin, Phys. Rev. D **5**, 3121, 3137, 3155 (1972) [5](#)
- [6] G.T. Hooft and M. Veltman, Nucl. Phys. B **44**, 189 (1972); Nucl. Phys. B **50**. 318 (1972) [5](#)
- [7] F.J. Hasert *et al.* [Gargamelle Neutrino Collaboration], Phys. Lett. B **46**, 138 (1973) [5](#)
- [8] A.C Benvenuti *et al.*, Phys. Rev. Lett. **32**, 800 (1974) [5](#)

## REFERENCES

---

- [9] M. Holder *et al.*, Phys. Lett. B **71**, 222 (1977) [5](#)
- [10] G. Arnison *et al.*, Phys. Lett. 122B, 103 (1983); 126B, 398 (1983); 129B, 273 (1983); 134B, 469(1984); 147B, 241 (1984). [5](#)
- [11] M. Herrero, “The Standard Model”, hep-ph/9812242.
- [12] D. Perkins, “Introduction to High Energy Physics”. [5](#)
- [13] V. Barger and R. Phillips, “Collider Physics”, Addison Wesley, 1993. [5](#)
- [14] E. Fermi, Nuovo Cimento 11 (1934); Z. Phys. **88** (1934). [7](#)
- [15] R.M. Barnett *et al.*, Phys. Rev. **54**, 1 (1996). [8](#)
- [16] CERN-PPE/95-172, LEP Electroweak Working Group, 1995. [8](#)
- [17] S. C. Bennett and C. E. Wieman, Phys. Rev. Lett. **82**, 2484. [12](#)
- [18] 2004 AIPC 721 367Y, Younus, I. 2004, American Institute of Physics Conference Series, 721, 367 [12](#)
- [19] J.C. Collins and D.E. Soper, Phys. Rev. D **16**, 2219 (1977). [21](#)
- [20] J. Ellison and J. Rha, ”Measurement of the Forward-Backward Asymmetry in  $e^+e^-$  and  $\mu^+\mu^-$  events with DØin RunII”, DØNote 3756(2000). [xviii](#), [24](#)
- [21] The LEP Collaboration ALEPH, DELPHI, L3, OPAL, the LEP Electroweak Working Group, and the SLD Heavy Flavour and Electroweak Groups, LEPEWWG/2003-02, Dec, 2003. [xvii](#), [14](#), [19](#), [169](#)

## REFERENCES

---

- [22] G.P. Zeller *et al.*, NuTeV Collaboration, Phys. Rev. Lett. 88, 091802 (2002)  
[Erratum-ibid. 90, 239902 (2003)]. [14](#), [166](#)
- [23] A. Sirlin, Phys. Rev. **D22**, 971 (1980); A. Sirlin, Phys. Rev. **D29**, 89 (1984); D.C. Kennedy *et al.*, Nucl. Phys. **B321**, 83 (1989); D.C. Kennedy and B.W. Lynn, Nucl. Phys. **B322**, 1 (1989); D.Yu. Bardin *et al.*, Z. Phys. **C44**, 493 (1989); W. hollik, Fortsch, Phys. **38**, 165 (1990). [9](#)
- [24] V.A. Novikov, L.B. Okun, and M.I. Vysotsky, Nucl. Phys. **B351**, 35 (1993) [10](#)
- [25] G. Degrassi, S. Fanchiotti, and A. Sirlin, Nucl. Phys. **B351**, 49 (1991) [11](#)
- [26] T. Affolder *et al.*, CDF collaboration, Phys. Rev. Lett. 87, 131802 (2001).
- [27] D. Acosta *et al.*, CDF collaboration, Phys. Rev. D71, 052002 (2005). [xvii](#), [19](#),  
[108](#)
- [28] V.M. Abazov, *et al*, Phys. Rev. Lett. 101, 191801 (2008). [14](#)
- [29] J. Thompson, “Introduction to Colliding Beams at Fermilab”, FERMILAB-TM-1909 (1994); Run II Handbook, <http://www-bd.fnal.gov/runII/>; Accelerator Concepts, V3.0 (2002). [25](#)
- [30] S. Abachi *et al.* (DØ Collaboration), Nucl. Instr. and Methods, **A338**, 185 (1994).  
[28](#)
- [31] S. Abachi *et al.* (DØ Collaboration), Phys. Rev. Lett. **74**, 2632 (1995); F. Abe *et al.* (CDF Collaboration), Phys. Rev. Lett. **74**, 2626 (1995). [28](#)

## REFERENCES

---

- [32] DØ Collaboration, DØ Note **1996**, “The DØ Upgrade: The Detector and Its Physics”; V. Abazov *et al.* (DØ Collaboration), in preparation for submission to Nucl. Instr. and Methods. [29](#)
- [33] DØ Upgrade Collaboration, “DØ Silicon Tracker Technical Design Report”, [http://www-d0.fnal.gov/trigger/stt/smt/smt\\_tdr.ps](http://www-d0.fnal.gov/trigger/stt/smt/smt_tdr.ps). [30](#)
- [34] DØ Collaboration, DØ Note **4164**, “Central Fiber Tracker Technical Design Report”. [30](#)
- [35] DØ Collaboration, DØ Note **3014**, “Design Report of the Central Preshower Detector for the DØ Upgrade”. [33](#)
- [36] DØ Collaboration, DØ Note **2894**, “The DØ Upgrade: Forward Preshower, Muon System and Level 2 Trigger”. [33](#)
- [37] S. Abachi *et al.* (DØ Collaboration), Nucl. Instr. and Methods, **A324**, 53 (1993). [36](#)
- [38] DØ Collaboration, “Calorimeter Electronics”, <http://www-d0.fnal.gov/hardware/cal>. [39](#)
- [39] R. Zitoun, DØ Note **3997**, “Study of the Non Linearity of the DØ Calorimeter Readout Chain”; J. Kotcher, “Upgrade Plans for the DØ Calorimeter”; J. Kourlas, “Calorimeter Electronics for the DØ Upgrade”. [39](#)
- [40] Q. Zhu, Ph.D. thesis, New York University, 1994, “Measurement of the  $W$  Boson Mass in Proton-Antiproton Collisions at  $\sqrt{s} = 1.8$  TeV” (unpublished). [44](#)

## REFERENCES

---

- [41] T.C. Heuring, Ph.D. thesis, State University of New York at Stony Brook, 1993, “Electrons in the DØ Calorimeter: A Study of the Systematic Biases in the Measurement of the  $W$  Mass” (unpublished). [44](#)
- [42] B. Abbott *et al.* (DØ Collaboration), Phys. Rev. Lett. **80** (1998); B. Abbott *et al.* (DØ Collaboration), Phys. Rev. **D58** (1998); B. Abbott *et al.* (DØ Collaboration), Phys. Rev. Lett. **84** (2000); B. Abbott *et al.* (DØ Collaboration), Phys. Rev. **D62** (2000); V. Abazov *et al.* (DØ Collaboration), Phys. Rev. **D66** (2002). [44](#)
- [43] C. Brown *et al.* (DØ Collaboration), Nucl. Instr. and Methods, **A279** 331 (1989). [44](#)
- [44] H. Yin, Trigger Studies Group Meeting, Sep 4 and Oct 30, 2007. [49](#)
- [45] H. Yin, Trigger Studies Group Meeting, Feb. 21, 2008. [50](#)
- [46] T. Andeen *et al.*, FERMILAB-TM-2365 (2007). [50](#)
- [47] D. Khatidze,  $W/Z$  properties meeting, Oct 31, 2007. [52](#)
- [48] A. Askew, D. Khatidze, H. Yin and J. Zhu, DØ note 5564. [52](#), [122](#)
- [49] J. Stark, Joint Algorithms/Physics Conveners Meeting, April 10, 2009. [74](#)
- [50] H. Yin, EMID meeting during collaboration week, Oct. 1, 2009. [74](#)
- [51] M. Vesterinen, EMID meeting during collaboration week, Oct. 1, 2009. [76](#)
- [52] The ALEPH, DELPHI, L3, OPAL, SLD Collaborations, the LEP Electroweak Working Group, the SLD Electroweak and Heavy Flavour Groups, Physics Reports, Volume 427 Nos. 5-6 (May 2006) 257-454. [76](#)

## REFERENCES

---

- [53] R. Hamberg, W.L. van Neevrven, and T. Matsuura, Nucl. Phys. B359, 343 (1991).  
[86](#)
- [54] J. M. Campbell and R. K. Ellis, Phys. Rev. D60, 113006 (1999). [86](#)
- [55] T. Sjostrand *et. al.*, Comp. Phys. Commun. 135, 238 (2001). [22](#), [59](#)
- [56] J. Pumplin *et. al.*, JHEP, 07, 012 (2002). [59](#), [162](#)
- [57] T. Nunnemann, DØ note 4476. [73](#)
- [58] R. Hamberg, W.L. van Neerven, and T. Matsuura, Nucl. Phys. B359, (1991). [73](#)
- [59] C. Balazs and C.P. Yuan, Phys. Rev. D56 (1997). [74](#)
- [60] S. Yacoob, J. Hays, H. Schellman, DØ note 5273. [74](#)
- [61] U. Baur, J. Ellison and J. Rha, hep-ex/0011009. [164](#), [165](#)